

Diary of my Sojourn on Campbell Islands
as commenced Novr. 10th 1919

A. E. Austin

EDITORIAL NOTE

The original diary has been reproduced as faithfully as the handwriting allowed, notwithstanding some inconsistencies of capitalisation, e.g. middle Point, and punctuation, e.g. quotation marks or none round a word or number - “sighter”, sighter.

Original spellings have also been retained, despite occasional inconsistencies (e.g. Sth. Col, Sth. Cole; Mt Faye, Fey; Dumas, Duma).

Names of boats, which appear in the original with or without quotation marks, have been here consistently rendered in italics with quotation marks (e.g. “Brindisi” is rendered “*Brindisi*”) to avoid confusion with other quoted names, e.g. “Promised Land”.

The occasional marginal notes given in addition to the date and barometer reading have been placed at the end of the relevant day’s entry enclosed in braces, e.g. {“Shot” bull}.

Editorial interpolations are enclosed in square brackets, e.g. circs [circumstances], to differentiate them from the author’s own interpolations, e.g. had a bath (soft music). Unintelligible or unusual words have been transcribed as far as possible and marked[?] or [sic], e.g. Molly Hawk Pt. [sic]. The explanatory interpolations that have been used occasionally, e.g. cut out [finished shearing], have been taken for the most part but not exclusively from Orsman, H.W. 1997. The Dictionary of New Zealand English. Oxford University Press, Auckland.

J.G.G.

1919

Monday
10 November

Left Dn. [Dunedin] by "S.S. *Stella*" from the Victoria wharf @ 10 am., when there was quite a crowd of our pals to see us off, although the absence of members of the fair sex was particularly noticeable. Steamed down to Port, where we coaled. While we were waiting on the boat, we had lunch with Capt. Hamilton of "*Stella*", leaving the wharf at 5 pm. Ran into a severe Southerly outside the Heads, Passing the "Nuggets" at 4 am of the 11th. We were forced to put into the Bluff for shelter, after 29 1/2 hrs. steam. Usually a 14 hour run! You can guess it was a tough trip but I am proud to say I was not ill.

Wednesday
12 November

Still blowing hard, so we are staying here for the day. Played billiards in the forenoon and were introduced to the Metzger family in the afternoon. Two of the boys are down here with us. Spent a very decent musical evening there and returned to the boat @ 12.30 pm.

Thursday
13 November

Leaving Bluff at 6 am, we made Lord's River, Stewart Island, where we had again to put in for shelter. Weather in the Strait very severe. A very pretty harbour. Went ashore in the afternoon and cut some fencing posts! (The Island is strictly a sanctuary.) Came across some penguins nesting just above the beach. Good fun chasing them. In the evening we rowed up the river. Quite a decent day.

Friday
14 November

Put to sea @ 6 am. Very rough: our decks were awash all the day ... although not ill, I could not venture up on deck. A great sea on.

Saturday
15 November

Still a great sea running. Passed the Auckland Islands @ 11 am, where the "*Hinemoa*" was at anchor, being on her visit to the Govt. Depôt. Saw quite a number of wild cattle on the Islands. Also saw the cairn erected to the memory of those drowned on the "*Durbam Castle*" and the "*Dundonald*" wrecked here some years back.

Andrew Nicholson,
manager of the
musterers on
Campbell Island from
November 1919 to
April 1920, and Joe
Joss, one of his team,
at Bluff.



Sunday
16 November

Decks still awash. Sighted the "Promised Land" (I crave pardon) @ 10 am, making Perseverance Harbour at 12.30. "Robby", my cobber, who has been here before pointed out the principal peaks: Mt.s Dumas, Col, Faye, Paris, Judge & Chair, Filholl & Honey. This Island was first discovered by the French & consequently places here bear French names. Perseverance Harbour is a great harbour, and runs East W. for about four miles. The three chaps who have been here for the Winter, were pleased to see us. Were very anxious to know whether Prohibition had been carried in the Dominion as they called NZ down here. After dinner we set to work and took stores and coal ashore to the woolshed finishing at 6 pm.

Monday
17 November

Rose at 4 am and shipped 24 bales of wool. Boat left @ 1 pm. In the afternoon Robby and I, who are sharing a room, arranged our kit, & now seem quite comfortable in our new home, which is just O.K. By the way we have 23 dogs here. One is struck with the variety of bird life down here.

Tuesday
18 November

Heavy rain thru the night; but a fine morning. Was introduced to the two dogs I am to work here, viz Keilly & Mac. (an Irish & Scotchman.) What if they argue on Home Rule! Set out for Square Hill [old name for Puiseux Peak], which took four of us until 3 pm. to muster, getting about 130 ewes including some treble fleeces which we shored when we mobbed up as they were too heavy to travel. My dogs were quite satisfactory considering it was my first day out with them. Heavy shower of snow fell just before we commenced the drive home. Arrived home @ 7 pm, "dog" tired. A severe initiation for our first day out. Square Hill is about four miles from the Homestead. Saw a sea elephant at the tidal Lake on the way home, Barometer today 28.9.

The kennels by the
homestead.
Photo by Alexander
"Sandy" Robertson.



Wednesday
19 November

Did not start work until 9 am. when we finished carting our stores from the woolshed to the store at the Homestead. Finished before dinner & in

the afternoon Robby & I took some spare books from the house to the Govt. Dépôt. & finished up for the day by washing down the woolshed ready for shearing. Have a heavy cold on me so will thrash my bed, after Andrew, our manager, has administered that hot "today" [toddy] he has promised me. Barometer 28.84.

Thursday
20 November

Wet this morning. Nothing doing. Fixed up some shears in the morning & in the afternoon went to Square Hill & collected some double fleeces, incidentally shooting some sea hens. Robby cut my hair after tea. On the lawn too! Made a good job of it! Barometer 28.58.

Friday
21 November

Had intended to muster today; but we had a heavy fall of snow during the night. The muster was out of the question. Continued snowing until 11 am, when it cleared. Not at all cold strange to say. Carted some gravel until dinner. Robby & I made a cabinet for our gramophone records in the afternoon. Rather a rough job, but will serve the purpose. Did an hours swot until tea. In the evening we went over to the "Three Brothers", a grave of three unknown castaways about a 1/2 mile from the homestead. Some years ago a cairn was erected there by the men of the station & naturally we look after the graves. There is no knowledge of the identity of these men. Joe, a Main Body man [first large contingent of NZ Expeditionary Force, WWI], is entertaining the fellows in the sitting room with incidents of his four years service, so will join them. Barometer 29.14.

Saturday
22 November

Very misty today. Rowed down to Terror Point in the forenoon a school of pug seals on shore. Killed three of them. Took us an hour to row back against wind & tide. Saw some sea lions on the way back. In the afternoon mustered Cave Rocks paddock. A good clean muster. Robby & I afterwards went over to the bridge (a mile & half back) and shored a double fleece. Barometer today 29.26.

Sunday
23 November

Wet today; but fortunately we had some 100 sheep in the shed, which were dry enough to shear. Put these out by 12 noon. Big percentage of double fleeces among them. I shored 12 (my first day on the board). Four of us shearing. The chaps reckon I shaped well; but personally I do not think so. Time & experience will improve me and I aim at my 100 before the season is out. Tailed lambs in the afternoon & drove our sheep to Cave Rocks. A great wind blowing in the afternoon. After tea shot one or two sea hawks [skuas] from our front verandah. Weather has now broken: a lovely evening outside. Sunday evening so played a few hymns on the cornet!! By the way, had lamb & mint sauce for dinner today: first of the season. Barometer today 28.9.

Monday
24 November

Showery today; but a very warm sun in between showers, (many in number by the way). Did nothing in particular in the forenoon: in the afternoon Joe & I took the gun & went for a stroll over to the Frenchman's grave. A Frenchman is buried here; about a mile from the house. He was a Midshipman on a French boat, which brought an

expedition here in 1873 to watch the transit of Venus. You can still trace the place where they had their camp. Came home in time to bring a ton of coal from the punt to the house before finishing for the day. Barometer 28.84.

Tuesday
25 November

Very heavy rain thru the night. In forenoon "foot rotted" [trimmed sheep's feet] & then drafted some 170 sheep we had in the shed overnight. Shored some 50 in the afternoon, & then docked and tailed the lambs of this mob. Heavy showers during the day; but quite mild. Am improving on the shearing stunt. Barometer 28.44.

Wednesday
26 November

Arose at 5.30 am. Some 150 sheep to shear. Started @ 6 am! Breakfast 8 am. Shored until 12 noon when we were cut out. I had a tally of 34 for the morning. In the afternoon Robby & I pressed three bales of wool: nearly all double fleeces. Some of the best fleeces I have seen. Finished for the day at 4 o'clock. Rather a strenuous day & I am very tired tonight. Weather today showery: cold sleet showers. Barometer 28.92.

Thursday
27 November

Per usual: raining this morning. Nothing doing: wound the phono-graph for an hour & then did some swot. Have done very little cornet playing since I came down here. Picked a pile of locks in the woolshed after dinner; but finished at "smoko" [break time]. Bill Ashton & I then went with our dogs for a stroll to South Cole (to look for Albatross eggs). Very heavy rain set in. We did not get any eggs; but saw quite a number of birds. We were rather early for eggs, although nesting has started. By the time we reached home we were absolutely soaked. Were "set" after a good tea. Barometer 28.8.

Friday
28 November

Wet again this morning. Heavy rain during the night. Grubbed some lillies in the Dipping paddock until 11 am. The Island is more or less covered with a growth of wild lily which the sheep do not eat: hence the grubbing. Mustered South Cole in the afternoon: took 5 hours: a very clean muster: about 250 sheep. Brought home some albatross eggs. Robby & I did some washing in the evening! Cold sleet showers today with S.E. Wind. Barometer 28.94.

Saturday
29 November

Rather a decent morning though a very cold Southerly wind blowing. Set out at 9 am to muster Nth. Cole. Rather cold up on the hills: two very heavy sleet showers while on our way up. Finished up at about 1.30 pm. Everyone satisfied that it was a very clean muster. Just as we commenced the drive home I badly wrenched that "football" ankle of mine: exit my usefulness for the day. Struggled home & after a little first aid to my ankle turned in for the day. Just before dark, the boys "shedded up" our muster: some 250 sheep. Barometer 29.3.

Sunday
30 November

Commenced shearing @ 6 am today: & were cut out [finished shearing] at "smoko" in the afternoon. I shored 28 sheep today; but could not do myself justice my ankle being painful particularly in the forenoon. Finished at 4 pm & returned home to doctor my leg. Have hopes of it being better in a few days. Cold showery weather again today.

Alfred Austin, early in
his stay at Campbell
Island.
Photo by Alexander
"Sandy" Robertson.



Barometer 29. Will have a few hymns tonight! Sunday & we have been shearing all day.

Monday
1 December

Not much doing today, so Andrew told me to stay in the house & rest my foot - tried to make myself useful helping Bill, the cook. Took morning & afternoon tea ("smoko") down to the woolshed where the boys were baling wool. Chopped quite a pile of wood & did some swot in he afternoon also. Glass very low today. A very high S.W. wind blowing. Barometer 28.49.

Tuesday
2 December

Arose this morning to find the hills covered with snow. Three inches around the house. A bitterly cold S.W. wind blowing. Work a wash out for the day. Went back to bed after breakfast & swotted until dinner time. In the afternoon Robby, Andrew & I brought some 250 sheep from Sth Cole to the "Home" paddock. We hope to shear tomorrow should the sheep be dry enough. Some heavy hail showers during the day. Weather like this has not been experienced here at this time for some seasons. Quite unseasonable. Hope it improves. Barometer 29.38.

Wednesday
3 December

Started drafting sheep at 6 am. Finished same & docking [removing tails] of lambs before breakfast. Over 300 sheep. Commenced shearing @ 9 am & continued thru the day finishing @ 6 pm. A hard day's work. A very heavy mist came over the Island during the afternoon & is continuing. A N.W. wind blowing today. Wind from that direction always brings mist. Barometer 29.32.

- Thursday*
4 December Started shearing @ 6 am & were cut out of the remainder of the mob we had in by "smoko" @ 10 am. Pressed wool until dinner time. We have 10 bales to date. In the afternoon we made an attempt to muster to Cole Valley, but had to "turn it in" owing to a very heavy mist coming on. This developed into heavy rain later. Arrived back at 3 pm & pressed another couple of bales finishing for the day at 4 pm. Intended to do some fishing tonight but it is too wet. Barometer 29.24.
- Friday*
5 December Heavy rain during the night continuing this morning. Nothing doing. Stayed at home in the forenoon. Scrubbed out our room & then swotted for a while. Ground shears & chopped firewood in the afternoon & later went over in the boat to the Bay of Beeman where we killed two pug seals. Weather has now cleared & we have promise of a good day tomorrow.
- Saturday*
6 December A fine morning. Heavy rain over night. Nothing doing in the forenoon. Did an hour's swot. In the afternoon we mustered the "front" of Mt. Filholl: over 200 sheep, which we drove down as far as the Depôt paddock. A good afternoon's work, arriving home shortly after 5 pm. Showery during the afternoon. Barometer 28.4.
- Sunday*
7 December Too wet to drive sheep today: consequently no muster. Sandy & I went over to Filholl & Dumas to get albatross eggs. Got about three dozen returning home via Cave Rocks about 2 pm. Had a fine view of the Island from top of Dumas saddle. A very heavy sea running: cold S. W. wind. In the afternoon did some washing & stored those eggs. Later shedded up some 200 sheep. Barometer 28.58.
- Monday*
8 December A fine morning. Set out @ 9 am to muster Lake Valley & the Saddle Back which we finished at 1 pm: about 400 sheep. A good % of lambs but of inferior quality. It took us three hours to drive home. A lovely day. Footrotted two pens of sheep ready for shearing tomorrow. Finished a good day's work at 6 pm. Barometer 29.1.
- Tuesday*
9 December Beautiful morning. Commenced shearing @ 6 am continuing on until 5.30 pm. Rain set in at about 2 pm when we stopped shearing to shed up remainder of mob. After tea we pressed three bales of wool finishing for the day at 8 pm!! Tally for day 46. Barometer 28.84.
- Wednesday*
10 December Shearing again today. Started 6 am & "cut out" of sheep at 6 pm! Tally for day 54. Pressed three bales of wool after tea finishing @ 8 pm. Has been a beautifully calm day. Barometer 29.1.
- Thursday*
11 December Heavy rain this morning. Robby & I stored some 20 bales of wool & also pressed one. In the afternoon picked pieces & chopped wood. I also cut Robby's hair. My first attempt in that direction: was much relieved to learn he was satisfied. A very decent afternoon: very hot sun. Barometer 29.3.
- Friday*
12 December A beautiful morning. Bright sunshine. Set out at 4.30 am to muster Mt Azimuth. Some great views of the Island on our way to the end of out

“beat”, at which we arrived at 8 o’clock. Some 6 or 7 mile trek. Mustered until about 11 am when heavy rain & fog set in. A “washout”. Mobbed up some 120 sheep which we drove home by 3 pm. Heavy rain. After a good tea we were “set”. Hope for a better day next time we are out that way. Barometer 29.1.

Saturday
13 December

Heavy rain overnight. Too wet & foggy to muster. Put out pieces & locks to dry in the sun (between frequent showers). Very frequent. In the afternoon Robby & I finished chopping those lilies in the “Shipping” paddock & later made (or rather helped to make) a dog kennel which when painted looked “some” job. Showery in the afternoon with glimpses of hot sun. In the evening Bill Manson & I went to the Garden Creek with our gun. Shot four hawks. Barometer 29.1.

Sunday
14 December

Wet today. Between showers Robby & I went over to the Cave Rocks to dig rubies. Washed quite a number: they are of little commercial value being too soft to cut. Shot a hawk on our way out. Very cold out on the hills. A heavy mist envelopes the hills today. A very quiet day. Barometer 29.

Monday
15 December

Heavy rain overnight. Too wet to drive sheep. Beautiful morning. Went down to Bushy Point where we cut a cord of firewood. Towed same back in one of the boats. A hard row: arrived home 2 pm. Carted gravel in afternoon & after tea unloaded & stacked wood. Took one or two snaps during the day. Heavy mist on peaks toward night. Barometer 29.1.

Tuesday
16 December

Per usual: wet overnight. A good morning. Footrotted some 80 sheep we had in hand & then worked on yard fences until mid-day. Shore in afternoon & cut out at “smoko” when we docked lambs. Finished at 4.30 pm. Misty on hills: fine otherwise. In the evening went up in the boat to head of the Bay where we shot a seal; but were unfortunate in losing it. Barometer 29.1 & steady.

Wednesday
17 December

Fine morning though misty. Mustered Duma: over 300 sheep: Arrive home 2.30 pm. After dinner foot-rotted our muster & ground shears. Saw some wild cattle over at Capstan Bay while mustering. Looked very fit. Weather now calm: mist clearing. Barometer 29.38.

Thursday
18 December

A beautiful morning. Put out some 280 sheep by 4 pm. Docked lambs & then pressed four bales of wool finishing for day at 6 pm. Tally for day 66. A great night: very calm: harbour a great sight. Barometer 29.1.

Friday
19 December

Foggy this morning. Laid out wet fleeces & picked pieces until 11 am when we had dinner. Weather cleared. Rowed down the harbour to the “Slip”. Took some “snaps” en route. Left our boat with Bill to row back. Mustered harbour side of Honey, finishing at 7.30 pm! About 500 sheep. Very hard sheep to drive. A very satisfactory muster. After tea three of us rowed to Green Point in the dinghy & brought back the boat which Bill had perforce to moor there being unable to make way against the wind.

Bill Manson mustering
on Mt Honey.
Photo by Alexander
"Sandy" Robertson.



Arrived home 10 pm. A good hard day. A lovely night on the water.
Barometer 28.68.

Saturday
20 December

Brilliant sunshine this morning. Laid out wet fleeces & picked pieces in morning. Took some "snaps" of yesterday's muster, which we shedded up after dinner commencing shearing @ 2 pm & continuing on until 6 pm. Showery during afternoon. Pressed two bales after tea. Barometer 28.28 falling.

Sunday
21 December

Shearing today from 6 am to 6.30 pm. Docked 150 lambs. After tea drove 26 rams to Beeman. A very boisterous day. Heavy wind & cold showers. Tally for day 87. Barometer 28.8.

More "snaps" of the
muster.
Photos by Alexander
"Sandy" Robertson.



- Monday*
22 December Fine morning. Very warm. Mustered Cole Valley scrub. Some 63 sheep. Drafted before lunch & in the afternoon shored. Tally 18. Pressed 7 bales of wool finishing after tea. Steady rain during afternoon. Barometer 29.
- Tuesday*
23 December Heavy rain this morning. Nothing doing. Read all morning. In afternoon picked pieces & cleaned up wool shed. In evening rowed down to Bushy Point in search of seals; but nothing doing in this direction. Home 7 pm. Rain ceased mid-day. Barometer 29.2.
- Wednesday*
24 December Wet today. Nothing doing in forenoon. Read all morning. Repaired fences in yards & picked pieces in afternoon & later took the gun to Garden Creek. Had four shots: four hawks: unerring shots! Rain has now ceased. A quiet Xmas Eve. Would be more exciting if in N.Z.: however, that will keep. Omitted to say also shot a shag from the wharf. Death to the birds! Barometer 29.12.
- Thursday*
25 December
Xmas Day A dull morning: Calm. Set out at 6 am to muster the back of Honey. Took about 1 1/2 hours to walk to our beat via Filholl track, Robby & I working together. Heavy fog & rain set in. After deliberation decided to give it up so set out for home?; but after walking for some hour or so found we were lost. Lit a fire & waited for fog to lift. It did & we found we were at the mouth of the harbour: some six miles from home! Fog disappeared but rain continued. Arrived home after mid-day. A great experience! Christmas Day. After our dinner (some good) retired for the day. Now severe fog all around. Barometer 28.62.
- Friday*
26 December Set out at 8 am to muster same ground as was object of our futile effort yesterday. Accomplished this by 6.30 pm! Some 200 sheep: fair muster. Some grand views from summit of Honey. (1886 ft.). Good day; but for one or two cold showers. Longest trek I have had on Island yet. Barometer 29.39 rising.
- Saturday*
27 December Heavy rain overnight. Drove Mt Honey sheep from Cole paddock thru Cave Rocks. Two hours job. Took gun with us: shot some hawks en route. Did some washing on arrival home. In afternoon Robby & I made cabinet for our lamps & later chopped wood. After tea shedded up yesterday's muster: foottrotted same: ground shears. Finished 7.30 pm. Heavy mist. Barometer 29.32.
- Sunday*
28 December Heavy wind & misty this morning. Shored until 1 pm when we were cut out. Tally for morning 54/ In afternoon picked pieces & spread wet fleeces & tidied up shed. Finished for day 3 pm. Swotted until evening. Rain & wind continues. Our cook has been ill last two days & Andrew has assumed his duties. Barometer 29.
- Monday*
29 December A fine morning: very clear. Mustered harbour side of Lyall Peaks from "big" Gully. Started 8 am: mobbed up at 5 pm! Some 272 "woollies". Drove to Depôt paddock & after tea drafted & shedded up. Rather a strenuous day. Very fine view from the Peaks. Barometer 29.8.

Tuesday
30 December

Misty this morning. Shearing commenced after we had footrotted & docked lambs. Cut out @ 4 pm. Tally 63. Some great double fleeces. Took a couple of "snaps" of them. Pressed two bales of wool. Now have 42 to date. Turned sheep out. Still foggy: very mild. Barometer 29.78.

Wednesday
31 December

Reveille 5 am. Grand morning. Went down in boat to "Terror" Pt. where we left the boat & climbed over Honey to South Point which we mustered. A clean muster. A great day. Very warm sun. Mobbed up at 1 pm. Some 180 sheep. Arrived home 5 pm. A 12 hrs job! After tea drafted & shedded up. The best day we have had yet. Took a film of "snaps". Great school of seals & sea lions at S.E. Bay. Barometer 29.95.



The homestead. Photo by Bill Fleck.

1920

- Thursday*
1 January Breakfast 5 am. A great morning. Rowed down to the Heads - over an hours row. Set out to muster N. E. Harbour side of Lyall Peaks. Longest drive we have had yet. Very warm day. Brilliant sun-shine. Took the camera with me. A good opportunity to use same. Sheep very stubborn. Hard driving. Mobbed up @ 5 pm. A great muster. Home 6.30 pm. Joe & I went to Bay of Beeman & rowed home the boat left there in the morning. After tea drafted, shedded up & ground shears. Started some good "burns" on the run. Undergrowth very dry. Finished up 8.30 pm! Barometer 30.
- Friday*
2 January Shearing today. Footrotting & docking lambs before we commenced. Shore until 5.30 pm when we pressed two bales of wool making our total 46. A very broken day shearing - footrotting, docking & pressing between times. After tea Sandy & I rowed around the head of the harbour & picked up 5 double fleeces left there on the drive from Sth Point. Very decent on the water: Shearing tally for day 80. Barometer 29.4.
- Saturday*
3 January Heavy rain this morning. Footrotted the remainder of mob in hand & then continued shearing. Cut out shortly after noon. Tally "47". Pressed four bales of wool making 51 in all, constituting a record for same date in previous seasons. Finished for day at 3 pm. Rain continuing. N.E. wind. Barometer 28.62.
- Sunday*
4 January Showery today: with glimpses of sunshine. Nothing doing in forenoon. In afternoon stored bales: Robby & I took out the South Pt. sheep while the rest of the "staff" took out the "Peaks" sheep, which we had held after shearing. A very quiet day: Rain showers overnight. Cold winds. Barometer 28.8.
- Monday*
5 January Breakfast gong 5.30 am. Set out to muster Monument Head beyond the Lake. Arrived on outer beat at 9 am. Bitterly cold S. wind blowing with sleet showers. Robby & I went to the head of the "point", enroute seeing quite a number of pug seals on the beach - also penguins. Also saw quite a number of fur seals; but had no time to molest them. Great views of a very heavy sea from the cliffs. Mobbed up at 1 pm & drove home to Dépôt paddock. Too wet to shed up. A miserable day on the hills. Muster all double fleeces - not mustered last season. After tea turned in for day. Rain continuing. Barometer 29.5.
- Tuesday*
6 January Foggy this morning. Muster a wash-out. In forenoon scrubbed out wool-shed & "board" & picked pieces putting same out to dry. Robby & Ashton brought in sheep, drafted same & drove out shorn sheep. After dinner erected staging for drying wool & did "odd jobs" around shed. This term "odd jobs" has a great range. After tea shedded up yesterday's muster: sheep very refractory: after use of many words & persuasion managed the job. Very windy today: fine otherwise. Still foggy on tops. Barometer 29.55.

- Wednesday*
7 January Heavy fog this morning. Commenced shearing at 8.30 am. All double fleeces. "Cut out" just after dinner. Tally for morning 48. Had an accident. Cut my hand rather badly with shears; but, however, saw the sheep out. Drove to Depôt paddock. Pressed two bales of wool & finished for day at 2.30 pm. Rain continuing with N. wind. In evening developed photos. Met with indifferent success. Barometer 28.82.
- Thursday*
8 January A very stormy night: cold sleet showers accompanied by a very severe gale. Too wet & boisterous to muster. "Bill" Ashton & Robby drove out shorn sheep. Andrew, Joe & I put a much needed wing on a fence in shipping yard. A very substantial job; which we finished early in afternoon when we put in some posts & rails an addition to fencing on shipping wharf. A useful though quiet day. Very cold wind continuing with sleet showers.
- Friday*
9 January Breakfast 3.30 am! Clear morning though dull. Set out at 4.30 to muster Azimuth being our second venture on same, rain preventing us finishing it on first occasion. After three hrs. walk arrived on our beat. A very clean muster. Some cold rain showers: fog held off. Mobbed up at 1.30 pm. Drove home to Cole paddock, sheep being too wet to shed up. Finished for day at 4 pm. A good day's work. Wind continuing Northerly. Barometer 29.05.
- Saturday*
10 January Wet overnight. Fine this morning. No muster. Nothing doing in forenoon. In afternoon Robby & I washed some wool & later took a stroll over to the Cole scrub, where, after a lot of excitement "captured" three fleeces. Home at 5 pm. A very quiet day. Fine weather continuing: hope for muster tomorrow. Barometer 28.48.
- Sunday*
11 January Heavy rain overnight. No muster today. Nothing doing in forenoon. After dinner Bill Ashton, Robby & I walked over to Capstan Bay, so named on a/c of the old capstan still there on the beach, a relic of old whaling days. A very interesting place. A great amount of whalebone on the beach, also some Oregon driftwood. Killed three pug seals, bringing home one skin. a very cold day on the hill. Showery in afternoon. Glass registered 28 this morning. Barometer 28.22
- Monday*
12 January Cook arose @ 2.30 am, & had breakfast ready at 3.30; but heavy rain then setting in, muster was abandoned for day. Nothing doing in forenoon. Later brought in sheep from Cole paddock; but were too wet to work with so put them out in Home paddock. Heavy showers during day. A quiet day! Barometer 28.68.
- Tuesday*
13 January Set out 5.15 am to muster Fey. Dull morning. Heavy rain & sleet showers. Arrived on our beat at 10.30 am. Some walk! Very heavy going. A long drive up Fey Valley. Some fine waterfalls on way up. Unfortunately did not have camera. Mobbed up at 5.45 pm. Sleet & snow showers during day. Cold on tops. Drove home to Beeman, sheep travelling very well. Home @ 8 pm. A 15 hours muster. Biggest day yet.

Am very tired tonight. Weather now more settled. Very calm on harbour. Barometer 28.74.

Wednesday
14 January

A great morning. Four of us rowed down to Terror Point & brought back the two boats which have been there since we mustered "Honey". In afternoon siphoned out the dip, cleaned out & filled up same ready for dipping. Heavy showers during afternoon. Finished @ 3 pm. Chopped a little wood later! Wind has now hauled to S: we are hoping for better weather. Barometer 28.7.

Thursday
15 January

Weather fine but doubtful this morning. Spread out wet fleeces & pieces in shed & drove sheep into Depôt paddock. In afternoon pressed three bales of wool. Fine drying wind: continuing fine. In evening Bill, Robby & I mustered paddock. Yarded, drafted & "shedded" up. "Robby" & I driving shorn sheep which came in with mob, to Nth Cole paddock. Two of the "crew" then ground shears in readiness for shearing tomorrow. A useful day. Barometer 29.25.

Friday
16 January

A beautiful morning. Commenced shearing @ 6 am; cut out at 1.30 pm. Tally 50. Had our photos taken on the "board". Turned out shorn sheep to Nth Cole & then mustered Beeman where we had left Fey sheep. Finished @ 5 pm when we drove home. Brought in all wool & fleeces (drying on cloths). Beautiful sunshine all day. Then drafted & "shedded" up. After tea pressed six bales finishing at 9 pm. Another useful day. Barometer 29.57.

A good day's shearing.



Saturday
17 January

A great morning. Commenced shearing @ 6 am continuing on until 5 pm when we docked lambs & brought in drying wool. It has been a lovely day: "one out of the box". Tally for day 90: best tally to date. After tea

pressed four bales: 67 to date & brought in balance of sheep. Finished for day at 7.30 pm. Weather now threatening: glass has dropped considerably. Barometer 28.24.

Sunday
18 January Heavy rain during night, but fine this morning. Commenced shearing at 6 am: Cut out at 10 am. Tally "27". Ashton & Robby drove out shorn sheep. Bill & I killed wethers for house, finishing for day @ 12 o'clock. Showery later in day. Had a half holiday: took advantage of same & "turned in" for afternoon. Barometer 29.26.

Monday
19 January Very wet this morning, rain continuing until mid-day, when we had bright sunshine for remainder of day. Pressed wool. (tally 71 bales) & picked pieces in forenoon. After dinner dipped rams, same being driven to Beeman. In evening I took the gun & my dog (Have only one now, "Keilly" having met his fate, his period of usefulness having apparently ended). & went for a stroll: nothing doing in shooting line. A useful day. Barometer 29.24.

Tuesday
20 January Very heavy mist this morning. Picked remainder of pieces on hand & made a whip (pug skin). In afternoon nothing doing. Knocked up a much needed box for clothes pegs. Scrubbed out our room & had a bath (really not needed!). A red letter day!! After tea ground shears. Mist now clearing. Barometer 29.24.

Wednesday
21 January Heavy mist. Collected tools & went to Cave Rocks paddock where we repaired fences until 3 pm, when we returned home. Heavy wind from N: cold on hill. Repairs were then made on the wharf (preparing for wool loading). Continued same for some time after tea. Barometer 29.3.

Thursday 22 &
Friday 23 January Steady rain & forenoon continuing until noon, when weather cleared. Wind S'ly. Set out @ 2 pm; Bill & I mustering the Hole of Mt Paris, the "rest" driving sheep over "Judge & Chair". Drove up as far as Penguin Creek, finishing at 7 pm. Camped for night at Hut @ N W Bay. A very decent little crib. A fine beach: great number of sea lions on the beach: quite ferocious animals. Killed & skinned one. "Turned in" @ 10 pm: practically no sleep: arose at 2.30 am & set out to muster Head & face of Paris. A beautiful day. Great penguin rookeries at the Head. Myriads of these quaint looking birds: By the way, we caught a King penguin @ N. W. Bay. Took some snaps during the day. Mobbled up at 11 am; drove home to yards, & after tea drafted & shedded up. A good 14 hour day. Barometer 29.1.

Saturday
24 January Very dull this morning turning later to rain. In afternoon cleared up: bright sunshine for remainder of day. Started shearing at 6 am, continuing until 4.30 pm, when we docked lambs & pressed wool. Shearing tally 83. Barometer 28.94.

Sunday
25 January Foggy this morning. Continued shearing: cut out @ 10 am. Tally 34. Sheep were put in Cole paddock. Pressed three bales & put out drying cloths. Finished for day at noon. Bright sunshine for rest of day. Read all

- afternoon & put in wool before tea. After went for a stroll with Joe & later Bill & I tried floundering: but unsuccessful. A grand evening.
- Monday*
26 January Wet & misty this morning. Pressed wool, & picked pieces in forenoon. Cleared in afternoon. Cut stakes from Honey & rowed to head of harbour & finished repairing Cave Rocks paddock. Home at 7 pm. Not a very exciting day. Barometer 29.41.
- Tuesday*
27 January Rain overnight. Too wet to muster. Repairs to wharf in forenoon. Afternoon spent mustering face at back of Duma: 12 sheep. Drove to Dépôt. Home 7 pm. Good day on hill: bright sunshine. Barometer 29.55.
- Wednesday*
28 January Dull this morning. Commenced our second muster: Square Hill: Set out 4 am: mobbed up @ 11 am: drove home to Cave Rocks paddock. Very clean muster. Showers in forenoon. About 100 "woollies". Home 2 pm. After dinner turned in for afternoon. Weather fine S. wind. Barometer 29.38.
- Thursday*
29 January Dull morning. Revaille 4 am. Mustered Sth Point of Honey: Mobbed up @ 1 pm. About 60 woollies. Drove to yards. Home 3.30 pm. Shore "9" sheep on the run. Cold on the hills. After tea yarded & shedded up. A calm evening with promise of a good day tomorrow. Barometer 29.7.
- Friday*
30 January Revaille 4 am. Rather misty. Set out 5 am. Robby & I walking out via Filholl, Bill & Joe rowing down harbour. Mustered back of Honey & harbour face of same; some 600 sheep. Mobbed up @ 2 pm. Cold on hill; though, fortunately mist & rain held off. Drove home to yards. After tea drafted & shedded up. Some 65 woollies. A useful day. Barometer 29.54.
- Saturday*
31 January Beautiful morning. At 6 am Joe & I rowed down the harbour in the dinghy, & brought back the boat left there from the Honey muster. Hard row back: head wind. The rest had commenced shearing which we finished at 11 am, when lambs were docked. Brought in sheep from Home paddock & in afternoon dipped same. Then mustered Cave Rocks, drove to yards, drafted & shedded up, finishing for day @ 9 pm. A good 15 hour day. A great day & "some" night, though mist is now settling on tops. Shearing tally 43. Barometer 29.48.
- Sunday*
1 February A fine morning though misty. Commenced shearing @ 8.30 & were cut out @ 11 am. Tally 35. Remainder of forenoon drafted sheep & mouthed same. Branded wethers for N.Z. In afternoon docked lambs & dipped remainder of sheep on hand, same being driven out. Pressed five bales of wool, making 85 to date, finishing for day @ 6 pm. Yet another useful day. A very hot day: dusty in yards. Barometer 29.16.
- Monday*
2 February Rain overnight continuing this morning. Picked pieces & "cleaned up" shed. In afternoon washed some wool. Later administered a shave to "Robby". Cut some wood before tea. Cold out: showery. First quiet day for over a week (excuse frequent alterations). Barometer 29.16.
- Tuesday*
3 February Showery overnight. Cold. N. wind. I had a bad night: very ill, "bilious", so stayed in bed for forenoon, when I felt much better. The rest of the

crowd brought in the Paris sheep from Cole & dipped same in afternoon, when weather had improved. Had a day off spending most of same in reading. Took "smoko" down to woolshed & later I caught a "king" penguin on the beach. They make good pets; easy to tame. In meantime we have assigned him a spare pen in the woolshed. He is a very pretty bird & much bigger than the species called the "rock-hopper" [penguin]. Am feeling just about O.K. again & hope for a day of the hill tomorrow. Barometer 29.28.

An unusual pet.



Wednesday
4 February

No muster today. Bill & I syphoned out dip & forenoon & refilled same: also made repairs to Nth Col. fence. The rest of the crowd had been out all day at Square Hill, bringing back some 25 woollies, which Bill & I shore before tea. Had great fun feeding our penguin tonight! It has been a lovely day today. An exceptionally low tide tonight. Barometer 29.52.

Thursday
5 February

A bright morning: too bright as it turned out. Rowed down to the Heads, where we disembarked, Joe & Andrew bringing back the boat. We were to muster harbour side of Lyall Peaks. After an hour heavy fog came down, so we met on main top, lit a fire & waited hoping fog would lift. Had to abandon muster. Set out to walk home: six miles! Heavy mist continuing. We ran into a cloud burst; followed by thunder showers: Have never seen rain like it, Eventually home @ 1 pm. After dinner "turned in" for day. Mist now very severe. Barometer 29.06.

Friday
6 February

Heavy rain all night. Nothing doing today. Did some washing in forenoon: rain continuing. In afternoon pressed two bales of wool. Exceptionally high tides today. Barometer 29.2.

- Saturday*
7 February Rain continually throughout night. After breakfast we rowed around to Beeman, where we put some much needed netting on the break fence. Had a little excitement: while busy at work our boat drifted & Sandy had to swim out & get the boat. We are fine boatmen? We (four of us) did not tell the rest of the “company”, as they would “sling off” & ridicule us. However, we finished our job & home @ 10 am. Rain continuing. Turned [in] for rest of forenoon: afternoon “ditto”. Still raining heavily: glass falling. “Dot” had eight pups today, one of which have picked for myself. Barometer 29.
- Sunday*
8 February Heavy (always heavy) rain all day. Nothing doing. Put in most of day in reading. It now promises to clear up (7 pm). Barometer 28.68.
- Monday*
9 February Fine morning. Too wet to muster. Robby & I cleaned out some water tables in forenoon. Bright sunshine. In afternoon, Bill & I went out to Cave Rocks fence where we did some further repairs. We are holding wethers there for N.Z.. Home 5 pm. Rain showers in evening. “Lark” had 10 pups today (we destroyed 8). Barometer 28.98.
- Tuesday*
10 February Bright morning. Mustered home face of Filholl. Home @ 1 pm. Some 20 woollies. Left sheep at Home paddock. Afternoon wet with heavy mist. Nothing doing. Now raining (7 pm). Barometer 29.32.
- Wednesday*
11 February Rain overnight. Nothing doing in forenoon. Joe & I did one or two odd jobs around the house. After dinner dipped Filholl sheep, which were put in Sth Col. Later Joe & I went over to Cave Rocks where we examined fences. A cold though otherwise fine day. Barometer 29.5.
- Thursday*
12 February Wet overnight. Sth gale blowing. Nothing doing in forenoon. “Turned in” until noon. Later four of us went over to the “Col” rookery where we found two seals; but had no luck! However we shore eight woolly sheep: Brought wool home. Tea 8 pm. A very enjoyable jaunt. Weather now improving. Barometer 29.24.
- Friday*
13 February Dull morning. Set out to muster Monument Head, Saddle Back & Lake Valley. Heavy fog came down before we reached our beats. Bill & I going out to the Head. Plenty of fur seals out that way. Fog lifting; but coming on again. Carried on. Mobbed up 12.15. Very satisfactory muster. Home 3 pm. Drove to Dépôt paddock. Saw first young albatross of season today. Just hatched. Barometer 29.
- Saturday*
14 February Revaille 6.30 am. Mustered Duma. Some 25 woollies. Cattle looking very fit at Capstan Bay. Saw “the” horse on our way out. Nice day on hill. Drove home to shipping paddock. In afternoon drafted & dipped sheep. Drove wethers to Cave Rocks. Finished up after 6 pm. A good days work. Have taken over another dog: “Kelso”. Shaping very well so far. Barometer 28.82.
- Sunday*
15 February Foggy morning. Mustered Sth Cole: sheep stubborn. Some 60 “woollies”. Home 2 pm. After dinner mouthed, drafted & dipped Duma sheep, which we drove to Sth Cole paddock. Later Filholl sheep were put out. A good day. Barometer 29.32.

- Monday*
16 February Commenced shearing @ 6 am: "cut out" @ 11 am, when lambs were docked & sheep dipped. In afternoon mouthed, drafted & dipped Sth Col sheep & wethers, same being put into Depôt paddock. Later three of us drove out Duma sheep from Sth Col paddock, finishing @ 5 pm. A cold day with rain showers & fog. Shearing tally 35. Barometer 29.3.
- Tuesday*
17 February Breakfast 4 am. Dull morning. Immediately after breakfast steady rain set in: muster was under "cirs" [circumstances] abandoned. "Turned in" again. Rain (heavy) all day. No sign of abating as yet. (7 pm) Put in day at cards, reading & also a little music. Barometer 29.11.
- Wednesday*
18 February Heavy fog. In forenoon pressed three bales of wool & picked pieces. After dinner Bill & I put out Sth Cole sheep. A quiet day. Barometer 28.8.
- Thursday*
19 February Revaille 4.30 am. Good morning. Set out to muster Fey. Showery on the way out. Arrived on our beat @ 8.30 am. Saw a "molly-hawk" [sic] rookery on the far point. Quite interesting birds: smaller than the albatross. Hundreds of young birds just hatched. Now a beautiful day. Mobbed up @ 3 pm: mist came on just after 4 pm, drove to Nth Cole, heavy rain then setting in. After tea "turned in". Barometer 28.84.
- Friday*
20 February Clear morning. Set out at 5.30 am to muster Azimuth. Saw a wild duck's nest at Beeman bridge: seven young ones: very rare birds here. Arrived on beat @ 8 am. Cold showers on way out. Some sea-lions at beach at N.E. harbour. Later sleet & snow set in. Very severe: at times a blizzard. However, carried on & mobbed up @ 1 pm. Coldest day on hill yet. Home @ 3pm. After dinner "turned in". Very cold: snow & sleet showers continuing. Barometer 28.92.
- Saturday*
21 February Cold morning. Rain overnight. Bill & I brought in Fey & Azimuth sheep from Col & in afternoon we yarded, mouthed, drafted & dipped same, wethers being driven to Cave Rocks. Fog & rain later in day. Very cold in yards. Barometer 29.16.
- Sunday*
22 February Very severe rain all forenoon. Nothing doing. I did some washing. Mid-day it cleared up & was fine for remainder of day. Cold "S'ly" wind in afternoon. Bill & I examined & yet further repaired fences at Cave Rocks where we are holding N.Z. wethers. Barometer 28.98.
- Monday*
23 February This morning: fog, rain & wind: all severe. In forenoon picked over three sacks of potatoes: simply for something to do. Spent most of afternoon in sleep. Brought in two sheep later. Killed same for dogs. Our penguin has now finished moulting & looks some good [sic]. An uneventful day. Fog & wind still "on". Barometer 28.8.
- Tuesday*
24 February Still heavy fog. In forenoon, Bill & I worked on the "Shipping wharf" where we are making preparations for shipping wethers. In afternoon three of us put up a break fence in Home paddock. Showery during earlier part of day. After tea I rowed to Beeman bay & brought back Joe & Robby who were up there repairing fences. Great on the water. Now a beautiful evening. Barometer 29.03.

- Wednesday*
25 February Beautiful morning. Breakfast 5 am. Rowed down to Heads, dis-embarking at the finger post. Mustered harbour side of Peaks. Cold in earlier part of day but later quite warm. Mobbed up @ 4 pm. Drove to Home paddock. Saw two young “sooty” albatrosses today. Promise of a good day tomorrow. Barometer 29.5.
- Thursday*
26 February Morning calm though dull. Revaille @ 5 am. Rowed down to “Nellie’s (Giant Petrel) Rest”, where we dis-embarked, Joe & Andrew bringing back the boat. Saw a pug seal in the kelp. Climbed to summit of Peaks, when we mustered to N.E. Harbour side of same. Sheep travelling well, we mobbed up @ 1 pm. Drove to Shipping paddock. After dinner yarded, mouthed, drafted & dipped yesterday’s muster, driving sheep to Nth Cole & wethers to Cave Rocks. Has been a very calm day. Finished for day @ 6.30 pm Barometer 29.82.
- Friday*
27 February Revaille 7 am. Mustered Nth Col. mobbed up @ 11 am., Bill & I bringing home main mob & the rest mustering the scrub valley. Home @ mid-day. After dinner Bill & I rowed to head of bay & brought home two sheep we had failed to drive home. We then yarded, mouthed, drafted & dipped remainder of sheep on hand, same being driven out. Shedded up “woollies” in readiness for shearing tomorrow. A strong E’ly wind has set in. Barometer
- Saturday*
28 February Severe gale & heavy rain during night. Commenced shearing @ 8 am, continuing until 2 pm when we had shorn all the dry sheep. Tally 48. Then brought in lambs from yard: finish for day. Still blowing a gale with rain just as severe. Have still some 50 “woollies” in shed. I think this has been our worst weather to date. Barometer 29.04.
- Sunday*
29 February A stunning morning. Quite calm. Change from yesterday. Commenced shearing @ 9 am cut out @ “smoko”. Tally 18. Then docked lambs, branded & mouthed sheep, & dipped same. In afternoon pressed seven bales of wool making our tally in that direction 97. Went for a row after tea. A great night. Barometer 29.24.
- Monday*
1 March Dull morning. Robby wakened me at 5.30 to see the sunrise! A great sight. In forenoon picked pieces, & “cleaned up” shed. Later, moored the punt in readiness for shipping sheep. At mid-day heavy rain & E. wind set in. “Fini” for day. Spent afternoon between my bed & darning of sox. How thrilling. 5 pm wind & rain continuing. Intend to commence my correspondence today as doubt there will be time when “our ship comes in”.
- Tuesday*
2 March Rain overnight continuing showery in forenoon though afternoon fine. N.E. wind. Though not Sunday a veritable day of rest. Nothing doing. Put in day reading & incidental “odd jobs”. Barometer 28.44.
- Wednesday*
3 March Showery “throughout” night continuing “throughout” day with cold wind. Glimpses of sunshine at times. Saw two beautiful rainbows just beyond Beeman: nearest I have ever seen one. Three of the chaps went away with bags & shears for odd sheep. Nothing doing otherwise.

- Before tea Bill & I rowed to Honey & brought back Bill Ashton who was over there after “fleeces” Barometer 28.58.
- Thursday*
4 March Snow on “Honey” this morning. Very cold day with heavy sleet snow & rain showers all day. Did not venture beyond the woolshed. S’ly wind. Glass today steady. Barometer 28.92.
- Friday*
5 March Heavy fog & rain continuing all day; but short intervals (very short), Fog particularly heavy. A day in the house. Not very exciting! Barometer 28.88.
- Saturday 6 March*
& Sunday 7 March Saturday forenoon cold & showery. Andrew & I finished staging on shipping wharf while the other three of the “staff” went to Capstan Bay for stray woollies returning mid-day, when weather had cleared. After dinner we set out for Paris (not France) Bill & I mustering out the “Hole” [of Mt Paris] & driving to Penguin Creek. Camped at N.W. Bay for the night (no sleep). Saw carcass of sea elephant on beach (20 ft long). Misty before sunrise; but a good day later. Set out @ 5 am. Saw fur seal at the Head. Not so many penguins in rookeries today. Good muster. Mobbed up @ 2 pm. Home 5 pm. Shore some 17 sheep on way home. Strenuous day. Completion of second muster. Now heavy mist. Wind toward E’ly. Barometer 29.5.
- Monday*
8 March Close this morning. After breakfast we brought in yesterday’s muster from Depôt paddock. Later we yarded, drafted & dipped them. In afternoon I went around the wethers in Cave Rocks & made repairs in fence. Mist & rain came on making things miserable. Chased a woolly (300 yds). Downed & shore him. A great sprint. Did even time for last 100 yards. Home 6 pm. Soaking wet. The chaps had shorn the woollies from the muster & picked pieces.”Whacked” tally (17). Barometer 29.1.
- Tuesday*
9 March A calm morning. At 9 am launched the “*Brindisi*”, six of us rowing to Heads where we landed at Finger Post [?Davis Point]. Heavy fog. Mustered along Peaks to Nellies’ Rest, Joe holding & Andrew waiting in boat. Mobbed up on beach where we “downed” & shore sheep (21). All clearskin “bushers” [in bush during previous muster]. Could not muster this corner in main muster. Sheep would not drive. Had lunch then loaded boat with fleeces & seven lambs. Fair wind. Home 4.30 pm. An exciting excursion. Wind N & now showery. Barometer 29.08.
- Wednesday*
10 March Calm, bright, morning. Rowed to Heads: Honey side: same programme as yesterday, mustering scrub “corner”. Some 17 “scrubbers”, which we drove to beach & shore. Loaded up boat with wool & seven lambs. Home 6.30 pm. A regular picnic down harbour. Boiled the “billy” & all. Now a calm night. Sandflies very active. Barometer 29.24.
- Thursday*
11 March Calm morning. Misty on Nth. end. Five of us rowed to Honey where we hauled up boat & tramped to Sth. Pt. via Big Gulley in quest of “double fleecers”. Were successful to extent of 21. Joe got a load early in the day & came home. I waited at the boat with my load. A cold wait for three hours when Bill arrived. Joe came over & took me back in the dinghy.

- The other three brought boat back at 8.30 pm when it was pitch dark. A long though profitable day. Heavy rain now set in. Barometer 29.24.
- Friday*
12 March Heavy rain throughout night. Robby & I washing in forenoon. A "father" of a washing just quietly! [sic] In afternoon we went for a stroll round the wethers in Cave Rocks. At times heavy hail & rain showers with S. wind.
- Saturday*
13 March Had a bad night last night. Had to stay in bed today. Got up @ 4 pm. Not too "wise" yet. It has been a cold, miserable day with rain & fog. Nothing much doing today. Barometer 29.22.
- Sunday*
14 March Heavy & continuous rain throughout night, with showers fog & N. wind continuing all day. Spent day between reading & letter writing & sometimes a little sleep. Am feeling O.K. again. Barometer 28.88.
- Monday*
15 March Light rain in forenoon, when we pressed three bales of wool, making our clip to date "100". Rain ceased after dinner. Went to Frenchman's grave with the boat for a load of firewood. Home again @ 3.30 pm. In evening Joe & I went for a stroll with the rifle. Rain has now started again. Glass rising. By the way we let our penguin go today. He had not, seemingly, been well of late, so we thought it a shame to keep him, under the cirs [circumstances]. Were sorry to lose him. Barometer 29.18.
- Tuesday 16 March*
& Wednesday
17 March Bright sunshine in morning. Decided to go to Paris for "woollies" . Bill Ashton, Robby & I treked [sic] to N.W. Bay, where we left provisions at hut. Joe went out via Duma & took home three fleeces left at Paris on muster day. We then made for Head. Had a look at old whaling "lookout" on way. One "woolly" at Head. Rookery practically deserted of penguins. I got a load & made for hut; had tea ready for other two boys. Turned in after tea. Been a beautiful day. Late breakfast. Scrubbed out hut before leaving. Heavy mist. Set out for home via Col.: arrived @ 3 pm. After dinner spread our wool in shed & then had a "rest". Still misty with rain showers. Wind N. Barometer 29.18.
- Thursday*
18 March Fog & rain (at times) in forenoon. Joe & I scrubbed out the store & then carted gravel for the paths until mid-day. An improvement to paths. In afternoon Robby, Andrew & I took a stroll around the wethers. Caught & shore a "woolly" on Sth. Cole. Afternoon fine but rain now continuing. Barometer 29.1 rising.
- Friday*
19 March Very wet this morning though it cleared in afternoon. Foggy towards evening. Nothing particular doing. Put in day between wool-shed, & house. Bill Ashton brought in three woollies in forenoon from shipping paddock. Robby & I laid out the fleeces. In afternoon did odd jobs about house. Joe & I went for a stroll after tea & later baled out punt. Not a very exciting day. Barometer 28.9.
- Saturday*
20 March Rain & fog in forenoon. I "turned in" until midday. Cleared after dinner. Bill Ashton & I went to Duma, Joe & Robby to Monument Head. We got three fleeces & one in Cave Rocks. Home at 7. 30 pm. Bright sunshine all

afternoon. Now a lovely starry night. The rest arrived at 8.30. We had a very decent afternoon. Barometer 29.18.

Sunday
21 March

A calm morning. Rowed to Nellie's Rest when we made the main top, & again essayed a muster of the scrub from the "fingerpost". Cold on top with rain threatening. Mobbed upon beach. "Downed" & shore 14 "woollies". Rain now set in with heavy N.W. wind. Boiled "billy" then loaded boat. Set out for home in teeth of a "muzzler" (head wind). A severe pull. Ultimately made home. Put wool in shed. Finish. Wind continuing. Barometer 29.14.

Monday
22 March

This morning a heavy E'ly wind, with promise of much rain. In forenoon I gave assistance in killing of sheep. After dinner Robby & I jointly did some washing. The harbour "smoking". Now heavy rain has set in. Barometer 28.38.

Tuesday 23 March
& also Wednesday
24 March

A bright morning after rain overnight. Nothing doing so we decided on another trip to Paris in quest of woollies. Joe & Bill went to Duma returning same night with "8" fleeces. Robby, Bill Ashton & I made for N.W. with provisions for night. "Rounded up" cattle at Capstan Bay. Great excitement. I was "rushed" by a heifer; but managed to "side-step". A close call (so the chaps say). After dinner, made for Paris. A heavy snow shower was encountered. However, carried on, finishing day with "4" fleeces. Fine view from top of mount. Made camp at N.W. for night. Heavy hail & snow throughout night. Set out for home early: bright between showers. One lion at Middle Bay. Four "woollies" at Capstan. Drove them to beach beyond cliff: shore them at beach: great sea running. Great view from Col: all "tops" under snow: home: dinner: spread wool & later baled punt. Cold wind: "sunny". Barometer 29.02.

Thursday
25 March

Cold day with S. wind. Heavy rain overnight. Too wet to go on "run". Found time to make a pair of "clogs" (very popular here & handy too) & later in day had a bath (soft music). Now a fine night though wind continuing. Barometer 29.22 Rising.

Friday
26 March

Fog & rain in forenoon. Put in time reading. After noon very decent. Robby & I rowed over to Honey in search of wool. Went over to Filholl saddle via Honey. Six fleeces: enjoyable afternoon. While we were away a sea elephant came up on the beach in front of house. We missed that. A lovely calm evening: (a rarity): much appreciated. Barometer 29.62 & Rising.

Saturday
27 March

Very heavy fog all day. Nothing particular doing. Wind N'ly. A quiet day. Barometer 29.48.

Sunday
28 March

A cold morning with glimpses of sun, after rain overnight. Five of us treked out to Azimuth & mustered the valley & face of middle Point. Cold wind; but no rain on way out. Shore majority of "woollies" when we mobbed up, Bill Ashton taking on remainder as far as they would travel. Heavy sleet & rain showers now frequent. Severe gale on saddle of Fey & Azimuth. However home @ 5 pm. After tea Andrew & I spread

Visit to "Finger Post".
Photo by Alexander
"Sandy" Robertson.



wool in shed. Some dozen fleeces. Heavy hail showers now with cold S. Wind. An interesting day though conditions very adverse. Barometer 29.6.

Monday
29 March

Calm, dull morning. Went out to Fey. Heavy rain & fog commenced as we reached the saddle. Robby, Ashton & I went down as far as Molly Hawk Pt. [sic] Not many birds in rookery. Young ones almost fully feathered. Went down into valley. Three "woollies". Fog now thicker. Set out for home. Came out on summit of Fey. Home about 5 pm. Soaked absolutely. Joe & Bill Manson had preceded us. A miserable day. Wind N'ly & fog continuing. Barometer 29.38.

Tuesday
30 March

Steady rain overnight. Cold S. wind all day. Forenoon - nothing doing. Read ("as I spend most of my spare time") In afternoon brought in three sheep which were killed for house. Today we finished last of our vegetables. Do not expect boat now until after Easter. Now fine: cold S. wind. Barometer 29.1.

Wednesday
31 March

Rain overnight (this phrase could be deleted: unnecessary: it rains every night). Cold S. all day with rain showers & fog. Nothing of importance doing. With assistance, repaired a pair of boots: By the way it was mostly assistance (Bill Manson) who repaired them. That is all that is worthy of note to-day. Fog & S'ly continuing. Barometer 28.9.

Shearing Tally 1919

Novr.	22nd	35
"	24th	9
"	26th	34
"	30th	28
Decr.	3rd	30
"	4th	15 (till 10' am)
"	9th	46
"	10th	54
"	16th	21 (2 hrs)
"	18th	66 (to 4 pm)
"	20th	33 (3 hrs)
"	21st	87
"	22nd	18
"	28th	54 (1/2 day)
"	30th	63 (to 4 pm)

1919 [1920 - error in original]

Jan	2nd	80 (5.30 pm)
"	3rd	47 (1/2 day)
"	7th	48 (2 runs)
"	16th	50 (1/2 day)
"	17th	90 (6 1/2 hrs)

Tally Continued (Season 1919-20)

1920

Jan	18th	27
"	24th	83
"	25th	34
"	31st	43
Feb	1st	35
"	4th	7
"	8/9th	2
"	16th	35
"	28th	48
	29th	18
Mch	8th	17
		1257 Total

Season	19 - 20	1257 sheep
	20 - 21	1551 "
Total shearing tally two seasons		2808 "

Account

1919		Credit	Debit
Novr.	20th	6 fleeces	1 pkt matches (tin boxes)
"	21st		1 tin "3" Castles Tabacco
"	21st	1 fleece	18/12/19 " " "
	29th (washout)		27.12.19 1 pkt matches (card boxes)
Decr.	8th	1 "	3.1.20 1 tin 3 Castles Tabacco
"	12	1 " (Azimuth)	11.1.1920 " " "
"	27	2 " (back of Honey)	9.2.1920 " " "
Jan	1st	5 " (Sth. Point)	24.3.20 1 pkt matches
"	5th	3 " (Monument Head)	
"	8th	5 " (Lake Valley)	
"	9th	2 " (Azimuth)	
"	13th	3 " (Fey)	
"	14th	1 "	
"	23	3 " (Paris)	
"	27	3 " (Paris/Duma)	
"	28	1 " (Square Hill)	
"	29	7 " (Sth. Pt./Honey)	
Feb.	4th	5 " (Scrub./Sq. Hill)	
"	12th	2 " (Col)	
"	14th	2 " (Duma)	
"	15th	3 " (Sth. Cole)	
"	18th	1 Fleece (Sth. Col)	
"	19th	4 " (Fey)	
"	20th	5 " (Azimuth)	
"	26	1 " (Peaks)	
Mch.	3	4 " (Honey/Col)	
"	4	6 " (Col)	
"	5	4 " ~~~~	
"	7	12 " (Paris)	
"	8	1 " (Paris)	
"	9	21 " (Peaks)	
"	10	9 " (Honey)	
"	11	14 " Sth Pt.	
"	13	5 "	
"	17	10 " Paris	
"	18	1 " Sth Col.	
"	20	6 "	
"	21	13 " Peaks	
"	24	12 " Paris	
"	26	5 "	
"	28	10 " Azimuth	
"	29	5 " Fey	
Apl.	2	16 " Sq. Hill.	
"	3	2 "	

New diary (1920)

- Thursday*
1 April A dull morning, with S. wind. We (five of us) went to Capstan Bay, where we mobbed up the cattle: plenty of excitement. Tried to shoot one of the bulls: our .22 had no effect. I hit him twice; but he did not seem concerned. Heifer was bogged: eventually got her out with aid of a rope, & persuasion with whip. Caught two calves & ear marked same. Showery, on way home which we reached @ 4 pm. Wind still S. with cold showers only sometimes. Our pups (9 of same) are growing; but are now a "nuisance" age, having evinced a liking to worry anything around from a broom to the cats. An exciting day. Barometer 29.08.
- Friday*
2 April A great forenoon: one "out of the box": later in day wind hauled to N & we had heavy fog for remainder of day: now continuing. We have been out at Square Hill today. Left at 9 am.; Bill Ashton rowing to Honey beach in dinghy: beached her there. Made of [?a] sweep around the hill, shearing, as "woollies" knocked up [exhausted]. We mobbed up & drove remainder to Filholl gate. I had a load up (4 fleeces) & went on ahead; left same at boat: returned to gate where we shored "8" more. Put wool aboard in [sic] boat, Robby & Bill bringing her around. Some 23 fleeces. Home 7 pm. A profitable day. Barometer 29.22.
- Saturday*
3 April Mist with N. wind in forenoon. I did some washing (a small consignment: found it is bad policy to let it accumulate!) It cleared after dinner. Bill & I baled out the punt. Later I took the rifle & Kelso (dog) & went around the wethers in Cave Rocks. A good walk: very strong wind. Home again @ 3.30 pm. Now a gale blowing from N.W. a very cold wind. Barometer 28.98.
- Sunday*
4 April It has been a beautiful day: one of the best we have had here: calm all day, with bright sunshine. Four of us rowed to Bushy Pt. & brought back a load of firewood: home mid-day. After dinner Joe & I rowed to head of Beeman Bay: very decent on water. Returned at high water, when we unloaded boat & stacked wood. Joe, Robby & I then burnt off tussock in Nth. Cole paddock until tea time. A drive of mutton birds went past house to-day: thousands of them: Wind now N.E. Barometer 29.56.
- Monday*
5 April Severe E'ly wind throughout night, with heavy rain. Mist & fog in forenoon, turning to heavy rain which has fallen consistently for remainder of day. Mended a pair of boots (another pair) also had a shave! Occasion for a lot of barrack [teasing] here. Look quite civilised again. First since arriving here. Barometer 29.
- Tuesday*
6 April A fine morning; it has been a good day; bright sunshine: wind now hauled to N. We went out to Capstan Bay to shoot one of the old bulls. Plenty of excitement. Took the old "Martini" [rifle, possibly early .450 version] with us & also the pea rifle [.22 rifle]. Had only one cartridge, which Bill Ashton fired to no advantage: the bull lives: perhaps a charmed life: however "warmed" him up with a few rounds from the

.22. Home, disappointed 3 pm. After dinner killed four sheep for dogs. Quite a good day. Barometer 29.24.

Wednesday
7 April Wet all forenoon. Nothing doing. Cleared after dinner when Robby, Joe & I went around to the "Frenchman's Grave" in the "*Brindisi*", for a load of firewood: a good load, arriving home @ 4.30 pm. Fine afternoon but for one or two showers. Baled out the punt on our way back. Wind now W'y. Barometer 28.96.

Thursday
8 April A fine day. S'y wind. A light rain shower towards evening. Bill Manson & I ground four axes in forenoon. In afternoon five of us rowed to back of Beeman where we cut some 150 stakes, which we stacked on foreshore, ready for fencing. Joe & I walked home, the rest bringing round the boat. After tea Bill Ashton & I rowed to Beeman where I shored a sheep, which we had seen there in afternoon. A lovely night: saw two grey ducks at Beeman today. Barometer 29.88.

Friday
9 April Misty this morning, in fact has been so all day (that is when it was not raining). Wind still N'y. In forenoon Bill & I went around wethers in Cave Rocks & after dinner assisted in killing of sheep we had brought in in forenoon, when on our way home. Barometer 30.

Saturday
10 April Misty all day: especially so in forenoon. Joe, Robby & I have been working on Beeman fence all day. Notice days drawing in very fast now. A very calm evening. Barometer 29.62.

Sunday 11 April
also Monday,
Tuesday &
Wednesday
12.13.14. We observed Sunday ("a day of rest") as we thought. Nothing doing in forenoon: Robby & I had been to Depôt for a stroll after dinner: just after we arrived home the "S.S. *Stella*" hove in sight around Terror Pt.: "Robby" was first to see her. Naturally excitement ran, shall we say "high". Launched boat & rowed out punt. Too rough to work punt: moored her aft Steamer until next morning. Received my mail & we were naturally pleased to have news from N.Z. Went ashore & killed five

A rare and sometimes long-awaited sight - a boat appears.

Photo by Alexander "Sandy" Robertson.



sheep for boat after putting 10 rams on Beeman (Romneys which came down with steamer). Two men (2nd mate & Joe) came ashore & we had an "evening". Took them aboard after mid-night. Next morning pressed six bales of wool. Steamer came up off shipping wharf at mid-day on Wed when we commenced loading steamer & taking off stores. Finished such operations at 6 pm, when chaps going up made ready to go aboard. Andrew, Robby, Joe, Bill Manson & Bill Ashton have left us & Albert Metzger, as manager, & Paul McQuarrie have come down to take their place. Bill Fleck is staying on as our cook, so we are now reduced to family of four. They took away their dogs & six pups so "dog town" is also a reduced family. We saw last of boat at dusk. Exit communication for another six months. Today we have spent in unloading punt of coal etc. & arranging stores. After dinner we "arranged" our rooms. I am now sharing a room with Albert. Before tea we took a stroll over to Beeman & brought in some fencing gear we had been using out there. It has been a dull day with one or two showers. I have given over "Kelso" to Albert & have also now "Laddie" & "Clyde", who Robby left to me. Scott had 6 pups this morning; but when I discovered them at mid-day one was dead. However, rest seem healthy. I think that is all the items of interest during last three days. Barometer 29.6.

Thursday
15 April Lovely morning; calm: revaille 7.30 am. Albert, Paul & I have been out to Paris via N.W. Bay in search of mutton birds [shearwaters]; but although we ~~tried to~~ [sic] dug out several holes, had no luck, as rats had "got" in first. Chased two long tailed lambs (had only one dog hence the "chase") but were also unsuccessful in that direction. Saw one woolly. Returned to "N.W." & after a cup of tea made for home via Col: made same @ 6 pm. Paul & Albert at [sic] bit tired (a bit "soft" yet I suppose). It has been a beautiful day with a light N. wind. Barometer 29.65.

Friday
16 April "N." wind with fog & rain showers all day. In forenoon carried up stores & later I killed two sheep for the house. In afternoon, finished shifting stores & "cleaned up" shed. After tea Paul & I overhauled two rifles which were brought down with boat. We have claimed one each in meantime. Still N'ly with mist. Barometer 29.4.

Saturday
17 April Heavy fog & rain in forenoon. Have been arranging & "cleaning up" store; putting up a loft in wool shed, & doing "odd jobs" around homestead. Ground some sheath knives & chopped some wood in afternoon when it cleared, wind having hauled. Put a new chimney up in kitchen; a great improvement, so "the Doctor" says. Two of Scott's pups have died: have little hopes for a third. Still heavy fog. Barometer 29.38.

Sunday
18 April Heavy rain overnight continuing throughout day until 4 pm, wind then hauling from E to S'ly. Sunday is a day of rest in Winter: (not always so in the season). After dinner I did some washing, & later cut Bill's hair &

- beard (he was satisfied!). Another of Scott's pups have died. Weather now fine with cold S'ly. Barometer 29.18.
- Monday*
19 April A fine morning, continuing until mid-day when it became overclouded. Light rain in evening. We have been out at N.W. Bay all day, arriving home at 7 pm. when it was quite dark. Barometer 29.14.
- Tuesday*
20 April Fine morning: turning to mist after mid-day. In forenoon "took-down" a race in shipping yard & carried same to shed. Afternoon rowed to back of Beeman where we went ashore & went through rams in Beeman. All O.K. Home at 4 pm when we were finished for day. Barometer 29.18.
- Wednesday*
21 April A very cold morning (Reville is now always 8 am). S'ly wind. We have been all day working on a new chimney for the sitting room, but have not finished as yet. Job quite satisfactory so far. This is a much needed comfort for our winter months. In forenoon Paul & I rowed to Bay of Beeman for sand for our mortar. The afternoon has been quite mild though wind is now again S'ly. My birthday to-day. Barometer 29.2.
- Thursday*
22 April We have been working all day on that chimney; but have not finished it "yet". Weather has been fine but for a rain shower towards evening. Barometer 29.14.
- Friday*
23 April A gale from N.'ly overnight continuing until about 10 am, when it cleared, although we had showers again towards evening. To-day saw the completion of our chimney which is an O.K. job. The "unveiling" ceremony has been arranged for a later date. "If you would see our monument look around you!" Barometer 28.64.
- Saturday*
24 April Wind N'ly this morning continuing until mid-day: afternoon fine & calm: heavy rain & showers with cold S'ly wind after tea. Rowed over to Beeman after after [sic] breakfast & mustered same: drove home & shedded up before dinner. Old "Clyde" working well. Some 95 rams, which we "sorted out" after dinner. Paul & I drove three rams out on Sth Col, mustering paddock (Col.) on way out. Albert turning out other rams in various home paddocks. Brought in Depôt sheep on way home & killed one for house. Had left our boat at Beeman intending to bring same back later: she must have been struck by a "willy-wa" [sudden violent squall] as I noticed her upside down as we were coming back from shed. Rowed over & found she had been lifted 19 yds on beach! A total wreck! Minus some planks etc. Left her there: will command our attention later. Quite a disaster. However we have two to "carry on" with. You will thus see that it can blow here. Barometer 29.
- Sunday*
25 April Sunday: did some washing & chopped some wood in forenoon: also "scrubbed out". Afternoon "off". Cold S'ly wind with rain showers. Poultry for dinner today. Barometer 29.2.
- Monday*
26 April Cold S'ly showers in forenoon: did some "odd jobs" in shed washed some wool & made a new bridge over creek to dog kennels. In afternoon Paul & I drove three Romney lambs to Sth. Col: two of them over

- Capstan Bay valley & one on home face. Albert drove three out on Nth. Col. Heavy rain on way home: showers continuing. Barometer 28.8.
- Tuesday*
27 April Cold night. S'yly wind. Nth/ part of Island under snow. After breakfast Paul & I mustered Nth. Col paddock driving to shed. Albert mustering Depôt. Drafted rams & after a cup of tea drove some 14 rams to Fey & Azimuth via Nth Col. Sunshine between frequent showers of snow & hail. Distributed rams over block & set out for home. Heavy snow showers as we reached Fey saddle. Saw a number of young albatrosses (no vistage [sic] of feathers yet). Mustered up valley of Col. on way home (6 pm) Hail & snow showers continuing. Island fine sight under snow. Barometer 29.18.
- Wednesday*
28 April N.W. wind with mist & rain showers continuing all day. Turned out rams from shipping paddock to Depôt. Spent remainder of day in shed. Killed sheep for dogs, cleaned gratings, & picked over potatoes. A quiet day. After tea Paul & Albert went fishing on wharf: successful to extent one dozen cod. Barometer 29.24.
- Thursday*
29 April N.W. wind. Rain & mist all day (showery). Mustered Nth. Col paddock & picked out 12 rams. Drove thru Beeman; but sheep broke: lost three rams. Beginning of a run of bad luck! Lost another on Peaks [Lyll Peaks]; but carried on with our nine. Albert drove four down N.E. Side of Peaks, Paul & I driving other five over to Pisseause. Sheep would not drive. Things only "middling". Paul took on two & I persevered with other three; but succeeded in getting only one on beat. However we did our best. Set out for home: Mustered Beeman on way home: got another 6 rams out of paddock. Lost my sheath knife on run. After a good tea, we had forgotten our troubles of the day. Barometer 29.4.
- Friday*
30 April Dull morning turning later to rain showers & mist. Mustered Depôt & Home paddocks & drafted out rams. Spent an hour before dinner in wiring down house, a precaution that is necessary in Winter on account of gales (it would be "unfortunate" if house blew away!!) In afternoon set out for Filholl & Lake Valley with 13 rams (unlucky number). Lost 3 in Cave Rocks. However other 10 went O.K. for rest of journey. Home 5.30 pm. Barometer 29.42.
- Saturday*
1 May Dull morning: wind Nth, turning to heavy rain in afternoon. Evening fine tho. still blowing. In forenoon mustered Beeman for stragglers. Sum total of muster two rams, one of which took to harbour but eventually swam to Nth. Col paddock. In afternoon rowed over to Beeman where we made remains of our boat "*Hilda*" secure against tides (too windy to tow her back). Then turned out rams from Shipping to Depôt paddocks. Did my washing before tea. Barometer 29.
- Sunday*
2 May N'yly gale, continuing until evening, with very heavy rain. One of the worst blows we have had as yet. In forenoon put two wire stays on woolshed (a necessary job, as wind is not too kind to the roof.) Chopped

some wood during a lull. After dinner re-soled a pair of boots. Now calm night: moonlight (a severe change from first salute this morning). Barometer 28.6.

- Monday*
3 May Calm morning. Mustered out Nth. Col & Depôt, driving to shed where we drafted off 12 rams. Had a cup of tea, & then took rams across to Honey per “*Brindisi*”. Wind freshening from N.E. Landed rams, Bill & Paul rowing back boat. Albert & I driving rams along face. Just as we had finished our job (some trouble for a start as 7 of them broke back on us; but eventually Albert headed them) heavy rain set in, continuing until we reached home. After dinner; turned out remainder of rams & killed two sheep for dogs. Weather now showery, with glass very low. Beautiful moonlight effects this evening. Saw a thrush & a blackbird today: very rare sight here. Barometer 28.3.
- Tuesday*
4 May Severe S'ly gale with sleet & rain showers all day: very cold: a real touch of Winter: snow on “tops”. Put in a day in the shed, nothing else possible. I made a pair of clogs for Bill (our cook) & the rest of the Company made a deck chair an addition to our furniture. By the way a very neat job. Barometer 29.16.
- Wednesday*
5 May Calm morning. Snow on tops: air very keen. Mustered out Depôt & drafted out 10 rams; had a cup of tea: then boated rams per “*Brindisi*”, down harbour: 7 on Peaks & 3 on Honey at “Slip”. Ran down a woolly ram above the Slip & brought him back with us. Used the sail on the way down; but had to row back against a fairly stiff breeze. Had a spell at Green Pt.: one shower on way back. Home 2.30 pm: dinner then mustered out Cave Rocks (our 600 wether we were holding there for the steamer: but she could not take them). Drove sheep to Depôt & mustered rams to shipping paddock: one took to the water: but we eventually “landed our fish”. Dogs troublesome during muster: two earned a much needed hiding. A moonlight night: wind S'ly. Barometer 29.52.
- Thursday*
6 May Dull morning: rain after breakfast: shore that ram we brought up yesterday from Honey. Weather then cleared: mustered out Depôt. Drafter wethers: picked out some 40 “fats” for killing & also “culls” for dogs. Drove half wethers to Sth. Col: remainder Depôt. After dinner (rain practically all afternoon: with mist). Paul & I drove killing wethers to Beeman & Albert “culls” to Nth. Col.: Then Paul & I killed sheep for house & dogs. Finished for day at 3 pm. Yet another dog (Joe) is today deceased. Albert shot him after breakfast: as being of no use: a just decision. Barometer 29.56.
- Friday*
7 May Morning quite decent though dull. Brought in rams from Home paddock & drafted off 12 of same, which after morning tea we drove to Duma & Paris, with 200 wethers we had in Depôt. Sheep drove very well; no accidents. Distributed 6 rams on Duma & rest with wethers past big slip on Paris. Arrived there at 2.30 pm. & then set out for home. Big sea from

- S'ly. Home 5 pm. Honestly tired. Saw a jack hawk today: very rare bird here. Promise of good day to-morrow. Barometer 30. Glass High.
- Saturday*
8 May Calm morning: mist with glimpses of sun. Brought in rams & drafted 10; which we drove with a cut of about 100 wethers (which Paul & I mustered from Sth Col. paddock) to Sth. Point & Sq. Hill. Heavy fog on Honey. Separated at Falls where Albert took rams to Sq. Hill, while Paul & I continued on to Sth. Point. Home at 3 pm.: Albert @ 4 pm. Calm afternoon. Before tea I chopped some wood: Paul went "floundering": nothing catching.
- Sunday*
9 May Calm morning: very calm: no wind (those last two words are redundant): mist on tops: glimpses of sunshine. Took in remainder of our rams (8) & with a mob of some 50 wethers, drove same to Sq. Hill & Monumental Head via Lake Valley. Hard work punching sheep up Saddle Back. Very calm all day. Saw rookery of "Nellies" [giant petrel] at Sq. Hill & two sea-lions, biggest I have seen yet. (12 - 14 ft.) at mouth of Lake. Albert saw about a dozen grey duck at Lake. Did not get our rams quite to the Head: they "peaked" [?escaped to high ground] on us. Home @ 6.30 pm: quite dark. Now a perfect evening. That is exit [sic] as far as driving out our rams is concerned. Barometer 29.72. Steady.
- Monday*
10 May Very calm morning: heavy fog: after breakfast I rowed to Garden Creek in dinghy: took "Glen" my pup with me: his first experience in boat, not keen: Brought back a cast lamb which has since been presented to dogs. Did my washing before dinner. In afternoon "cleaned up" shed & at high water brought back remains of boat from Beeman: towed her. Put her in shed awaiting repairs. Fog now cleared: beautiful clear evening: calm all day. Barometer 29.5.
- Tuesday*
11 May It has been a beautifully calm day though dull. We have been down harbour all day with the boat (shepherding). Home at 6 pm. Saw some 12-15 woollies above Finger Post on the Peaks. Barometer 29.62.
- Wednesday*
12 May Light E'ly all day with fog: particularly heavy at times. Rowed to Nellies' Rest, where we roused sheep to rams: worked along face: made home: fair wind @ 4 pm. Cold in boat. Wind now freshening: glass steady. One sea lion at Nellies Rest. Barometer 29.6.
- Thursday*
13 May Misty morning: N.E. wind. Paul & I mustered out Sth. Col. paddock & on our way back mustered in Nth. Col paddock. Drove to shed. In afternoon I killed two sheep for house & Paul one "cull" for dogs. Turned out sheep to Nth Col again. Albert also mustered out Depôt paddock & boated one ram to Honey. We have finished with rams & have only killing sheep on hand now. A quiet day. Barometer 29.36.
- Friday*
14 May Calm morning: rain overnight: mist on tops. For a "sighter" we broke into Depôt when we assumed interim possession of the Depôt boat, while "Hilda" is undergoing her necessarily extensive repairs. A boat is absolutely necessary here: so our Govt. may pardon our presumption: it

- is not a bad pulling dinghy; but leaks badly. In forenoon we took the two dinghys to Bushy Pt. & brought back firewood: in afternoon at back of Beeman: same programme. Now have a good pile of firewood. It has been a grand day: calm & mild. Barometer 29.2.
- Saturday*
15 May A calm dull day with a light cold wind from N. At times it made attempts to rain. We have been working in the yards all day excavating a bank & erecting a new rail fence. An O.K. job. Barometer 28.94.
- Sunday*
16 May N.E. wind with rain showers: at times misty: beautiful sky effects early this morning. Did some washing: mended boots for Bill: chopped wood. Poultry for dinner to-day. Barometer 28.8.
- Monday*
17 May Heavy rain overnight. Boisterous day: strong Nth. wind with heavy rain showers. We have been working about the shed. Repaired some flooring & then worked on boat: also carried standards & posts out to new fence line in Depôt paddock. A quiet day. Barometer 28.8.
- Tuesday*
18 May Misty morning. Did a few odd jobs in shed for a "sighter": showery in forenoon. Before dinner Paul & I boated some 50 stakes from back of Beeman to fence line in Depôt paddock. Spent afternoon on fence: Bill is repairing the *Hilda* in spare time. Saw a jack hawk in Depôt to-day. Barometer 28.7.
- Wednesday*
19 May A miserable wet day: rain & N'y wind all day. Exceptionally high tide to-day. Glass very low. Now sleet showers. A day in shed odd jobs: grinding axes: & working on boat. Late in afternoon Albert & I put two more wire "ties" on house. Cold day. Barometer 27.98.
- Thursday*
20 May Hail & snow showers last night. Island under snow this morning: snow showers with S'y wind all day. Island a pretty sight. Strange to say not very cold during day; but now a cold night: taps frozen. In forenoon Paul & I mustered in "culls" from Nth. Col., four of which we killed for dogs. In afternoon continued with boat building & of course some "odd jobs". Repaired bridge to dog kennels. Barometer 28.4.
- Friday*
21 May Heavy rain overnight. Sleet, hail & rain showers all day with cold S'y gale. A miserable day. Lowest reading of glass today as yet. In forenoon Paul & I cleaned out gratings in woolshed & in afternoon commenced building new run for ducks. Could work only between showers. Albert & Bill carrying on with boat building. Barometer 27.44.
- Saturday*
22 May Heavy fall of snow overnight. Island completely under snow. A very cold day with heavy hail & snow showers. Working all day on boat. At 4 pm. Paul & I came up from shed & chopped a good supply of firewood. Now a S'y gale. All taps frozen. Barometer 28.3.
- Sunday*
23 May Four inches of snow this morning. Breakfast 9.30 am. Went down to shed & made a peg box. (had made one early in season but it met with an accident). Before dinner had a boxing lesson from Paul in woolshed. Paul is ex-heavyweight champion of N.Z. After dinner had our photos taken in the snow: a fine setting: could I say that as far as the "subjects"

- were concerned? Later scrubbed out. Now cold S'ly with hail & snow showers continuing. Barometer 28.28.
- Monday*
24 May Hard frost this morning. Now about 6 in. snow. Snow showers frequently all day with hail at times. Not exceptionally cold but a strong S'ly. Shed work all day on boat. Saw thrush to-day & also some smaller birds (a rare variety of finch). By the way, "Scott's" surviving two pups are quite lively: snow & weather not effective. Barometer 28.84.
- Tuesday*
25 May Still no thaw this morning: more snow overnight. Mild to-day: light rain towards evening with mist on tops: now thawing. Work on boat all day: Barometer 28.9.
- Wednesday*
26 May Light rain overnight: continuing heavier in forenoon: Hail & sleet showers in afternoon with bitterly cold S'ly wind. Boat work & odd jobs. Duck house is now near completion. Snow quickly disappearing. Barometer 28.4.
- Thursday*
27 May Cold morning. Snow showers & hail showers during day: not very frequent, though towards evening heavy shower of snow. Now hail & rain. Still S'ly. For a "sighter" Paul & I brought in sheep from Nth. Col.: killed one "fat" for house & one "cull" for dogs. In afternoon finished duck house & continued boat building. Another boxing lesson before tea. Barometer 28.02.
- Friday*
28 May Two inches of snow this morning. Mild morning: sunshine towards mid-day. Afternoon heavy rain showers & severe S. E'ly wind. Brought in dinghy from boat harbour: I have been working on same all day; but for "breaks" on one or two of those "eternal" odd jobs.
- Saturday*
29 May Rain overnight. Cold day with strong S.W. wind: one or two sleet showers. Now clear evening. Albert & I have been working all day on the new Depôt fence & we have made good progress. Very cold out there at times. Barometer 29.52.
- Sunday*
30 May It has been a beautifully fine day: mild, dull & calm though fine rain & mist towards evening. In forenoon did washing & chopped wood. After dinner Albert & I went for a walk out to Cave Rocks & Honey beach incidentally pegging out new fence line in Cave Rocks. Barometer 29.62.
- Monday*
31 May Dull morning. Rain overnight. Albert & I spent forenoon on new fence, now practically finished. Resumed after dinner but later heavy rain set in & we "cut our stick" [finished] for the day: returned to shed. (By the way Paul was overhauling his rifle yesterday & shot one of our tame gulls!) Quite unintentionally. Rain now over for meantime. Barometer 29.6.
- Tuesday*
1 June Calm day: mist very heavy: at times light misty rain. Albert & I put in morning & part of afternoon on fence which is now finished with exception of erection of gates. Remainder of day on boat. Barometer 29.94.

- Wednesday*
2 June Calm day with mist on tops. We have been “shepherding” over at Nth. Col. Sheep now showing wool. One pug seal on beach at back of Col. Also saw seals feeding offshore. Home @ 1.30 pm. Remainder of day on our “stand by” job: that boat. Some beautiful sky effects to-night. Barometer 29.94.
- Thursday*
3 June Nth'ly wind with mist: a shower in afternoon. Paul & I mustered in Nth Col “culls” four of which we killed for dogs. By the way, “Glen” & “Spark” (the two pups) are fast approaching the “nuisance” & incidentally the “tying up” age: only to-day they insisted in following us out & not content with that created a disturbance by getting in the way when we were bringing in those sheep: a circumstance which called for some language. This has happened before. (“Much ado about Nothing”): (not Scene II Act IV) [i.e. presumably coarser language than “Thou naughty varlet!”] To return: In afternoon Paul & I carted stones to “crush” yard: also boat building. Barometer 29.68.
- Friday*
4 June Miserable morning. Nth'ly gale with mist & rain. Towards evening wind moderated considerably. Shed work all day on boat. Barometer 29.62.
- Saturday*
5 June Calm morning though cold for a “sighter”. We have been down the harbour all day to-day, home at 3.15 pm. Went to Terror Pt. where we cut some rails & posts from scrub. Then rowed to Nellie's Rest where we killed two pugs for dogs as our supply of “culls” is fast diminishing. A light E'ly on way home. Barometer 30 & rising.
- Sunday*
6 June Miserable day with E'ly wind & mist: now turned to rain with wind freshening. In forenoon “scrubbed out” (sounds very “domestic”) & chopped wood. In afternoon I finished making a “coals scuttle” which has been occupying my spare time for some while. Also cut Bill's hair before tea: prior to submitting my own scalp to a shave by Albert. Hair still falling, hence this extreme measure. Now heavy rain. Barometer 29.82.
- Monday*
7 June Heavy wind last night. Strong E'ly all day with rain: now abated somewhat. Shed work all day. Days very short just now: not light before 8.30 & it is too dark to work after 4 pm so “short hours” is the order of things. Albert has not been too well so had forenoon off: now much better. By the way we have named “Scott's” two pups “Maid” & “Fey” (after one of our hills on the Island). Barometer 29.6.
- Tuesday*
8 June Calm morning: dense fog: soft rain in forenoon; but afternoon passably fine. Paul & I carted gravel to paths in forenoon & after dinner we three rowed to Dépôt fence and completed same, returning in time to put a new rail on one of the yard fences. Great fun to-night trying to catch the “Spark” pup who is being treated to a little of the chain. We tie the pups up at night when the dogs are off for their run; a very unpopular proceeding with the pups; hence the chasing. Barometer 29.44.
- Wednesday*
9 June Dull morning. Heavy & steady rain all day & still continuing. I took a stroll over to the Dépôt fence where I measured the two gateways. I

have been making the gates in the shed all day. A quiet day. Barometer 29.08.

Thursday
10 June

Drizzle this morning. Spent forenoon in shed where I completed those two gates: a substantial job. After dinner Paul & I took our dogs & rowed to Beeman where we brought down to beach a cut of some 20 wethers (from) which we took two wethers & also a ram that was in the mob. Rowed back without our dogs which however followed on Beeman side & Paul had to row over for them. Killed the two wethers & Albert rowed to Peaks with ram, bringing back a load of wood. We swept out shed before finishing. Night now clear. Barometer 29.18.

Friday
11 June

Revaille 8 am to-day; which is very early for these days. After breakfast rowed to Honey beach where we set out for Monument Head (shepherding). Turned out a beautiful day with sunshine up to 4 pm or thereabouts: then misty. No less than 14 pug seals on beach at head. No seals in main rookery, where there has been a very recent heavy fall of rock. Quite a few seals at bottom of the big cliff. Interesting watching them playing & swimming in pools on the rocks. Mustered up sheep on way back. Only two or three on the Head. One "woolly" which we caught after a long chase up Filholl: docked this sheep. Home 5 pm. A very interesting day. Barometer 29.32.

Saturday
12 June

Nth'ly wind with heavy fog. I have been working in yards all day erecting a new fence; which will be a considerable improvement when completed. Chopped wood before tea. A quiet day. Wind still N'ly. Barometer 29.56.

Sunday
13 June

Mist on tops with rain threatening. Wind N.W. Did not observe Sunday to-day; but after breakfast set out for N.W. Bay via Col., incidentally having a look at the sheep en route. Col. sheep looking particularly fit. By the way, this walk is without doubt the best on the Island. There is always something fresh of interest to see. Two pug seals at Capstan Bay, also two at Middle Bay, where were also two sea lions. Very reluctant to leave the beach. We merely watched the lions for a while. They are very interesting animals. It would be a feast for any camera fiend. A heavy sea on. Had a very close view of the cattle: another addition in shape of a beautiful while calf; probably two months old. Lunch at hut. Raced Albert 100 yds sprint on the sand; was beaten by 2 yds! Paul badly wrenched his ankle but was able to make home, which we reached at 5 pm. Paul's bad ankle means a cessation to boxing lessons for some time. Barometer 30.

Monday
14 June

It has been & is now blowing a gale from N'ly direction. Strange not very cold. I did not feel up to the mark in forenoon so did my washing; was sufficiently recovered to "carry on" in afternoon & spent it in yards. Barometer 29.66.

Tuesday
15 June

Beautifully calm morning: misty on tops. Spent forenoon on that fence in yards. Light rain at mid-day. Overhauled pelts in shed after dinner.



The homestead from the beach, showing also the dinghy. Sketch by W.R. Fleck.

- Cleared later when I finished my fence. Wind now N.W. Paul still confined to bed. Barometer 30.
- Wednesday*
16 June Calm morning: dull; heavy mist, turning to rain later. Commenced dismantling a fence in yards (re-newing same) but rain came on so I “cut my stick” [finished work] for shed where I picked over potatoes. In afternoon finished taking down fence then rowed back to Garden Creek & also across to Honey, where I cut a few stakes. Home at 5 pm. Light rain showers. Barometer 30.2 High.
- Thursday*
17 June A miserable day. E’ly wind & rain. Very uncomfortable. Spent day in shed on boats & odd jobs. Barometer 30.08.
- Friday*
18 June A wet morning. Wind N.E. Nothing particular to do inside so I started making a pair of clogs for Albert. Afternoon cleared so I worked in yards; making alterations to lambs’ pen. Now raining again. Barometer 29.7.
- Saturday*
19 June Calm all day with mist on tops. In forenoon Albert & I made repairs to wharf taking advantage of exceptionally low tide. Put in two new

- sleepers. An O.K. job. After dinner we rowed to Terror Pt. bringing back a load of rails. Chopped wood & cleaned out water table before tea. A useful day. Barometer 29.26.
- Sunday*
20 June Calm morning. Light rain showers & mist in forenoon; steady rain from about 3 pm. Still continuing. In forenoon "scrubbed out" & finished those clogs for Albert. After dinner Bill, Albert & I rowed to Terror Pt., where we collected some shrubs for transplanting around house. A beautifying society! Roused up sheep on Honey side on way down. A pleasant excursion somewhat spoiled by rain (always expected). Tonight we had a long & exhausting discussion on morals of modern dancing. The verdict I have withheld. Barometer 28.4.
- Monday*
21 June Shortest day & it has been a "stunner". Rain all day & still continuing. Worked in shed in forenoon & between frequent showers put in time on fence in yards. Barometer 28.24.
- Tuesday*
22 June A cold night last night. Severe frost. Everything out of doors frozen this morning. Island practically under snow. Albert & I, after breakfast, (Paul still incapacitated) set out for N.W. Bay. We took all the dogs with us (& the two pups). Cattle well up on Col to-day. When we reached Capstan Bay, we, or rather Albert, spied two whales in N.W. Bay. Not perhaps, I am told an unusual sight in midwinter. They were in the bay all day & always within a few yards of each other. We had some great views of them playing, breaching & spouting & we were only sorry we had not brought a camera. At times they were no more than 20 yds. offshore, & must have been fully 40 ft. long. Indeed, a great sight. Two Write [right] whales. Two pugs & one sea lion at Middle Bay. Unsuccessful in keeping dogs off. "Spring" was over anxious & was "tossed". His neck was torn but luckily not badly. After lunch at hut, pulled down one of the other huts (3 in all). We are going to carry it home in section & hope to erect it at the homestead. Set out with our load of timber. More views of whales on way home. A beautiful sunset from Col. saddle. Snow showers on way. Home 5.45 pm. A trying day for the pups, who are to-night "dog" tired. That is not a pun! Freezing hard. Barometer 28.74.
- Wednesday*
23 June Two inches of snow this morning. Mild in forenoon; but cold wind in afternoon. Dressed two ducks in forenoon (one for dinner tonight). Later overhauled pelts in shed & put damp ones out to dry, taking advantage of glimpses of sun. Spent afternoon in yards: One or two light snow showers. Saw a big snow spout on Duma to-day. Snow showers continuing. This is the place for frost. Barometer 28.68.
- Thursday*
24 June Frost overnight. One or two light snow showers during day. Bright sunshine in afternoon (at times). Now fairly mild. Albert & I have been working all day in yards; (more improvements). Barometer 29.
- Friday*
25 June Heaviest frost as yet. Took all our hot water to thaw taps this morning. Snow showers in forenoon with slight thaw. Afternoon milder, a little sun; now freezing again. Albert & I rowed to Beeman. Sheep on back

- face. I mustered sheep over top & after usual amount of trouble drove same to beach. Brought one wether back in boat & after dinner I killed him for house. On our way back I saw a sea leopard in bay. Albert brought out rifle & shot him, when I towed him back in boat. Leopard 12 ft long; first I have seen. After the style of a pug. Different head. We had a good view of him sporting in water; he came up once within a foot of our dinghy. Anyway he made a good feed for dogs. By the way, a good view of Southern Lights last night. Barometer 29.4.
- Saturday*
26 June A miserable day: cold with N.E. wind & rain showers. We have been working in the shed. I made a new gate for yards in forenoon & spent afternoon in overhauling other gates all of which we store in shed during Winter. Perhaps a quiet day. Barometer 29.18.
- Sunday*
27 June Sunday: washing & a shave in forenoon! Chopped wood after dinner: later made a boot "scraper" which I have erected at the door. Cut Albert's hair before tea. I think those are all the items of interest to-day. A very dull day; rain threatening all day. Wind N'ly. Barometer 29.46.
- Monday*
28 June A gale from N'ly all day: very disagreeable & boisterous. Shed work all day. I have been repairing gates all day & now have that job worked out. Shot two "Nellies" from shed to-day. Barometer 29.7.
- Tuesday*
29 June Calm morning with mist. Mild. Afternoon rain showers & wind from N'ly. I have been boiling tar to-day & tarring those gates, a job that is deceptive in the time it takes. I have not finished yet. One lot of tar boiled over; but, Paul, who resumed duty yesterday, put [out] the conflagration, without summoning the brigade. Albert & Paul have been working on the new shed. Strong wind now from N'ly. Barometer 29.96.
- Wednesday*
30 June Not a nice day. Gale (perhaps not a gale: safe to say "strong wind") from N'ly all day with rain showers: now steady rain. I have been tarring those gates all day & have only three more to do. Barometer 29.38.
- Thursday*
1 July A gale from Nth. last night ; later subsiding when rain set in. Wind blew roof from old salt hut, so Albert pulled remainder of it down to-day. We hope to have our new hut completed in a few days. I finished tarring those gates today, while remainder of outfit has been working on new hut. I was not "up to the mark" this morning, so did not commence work until 11 am. Now about O.K. Light drizzle from Nth. Barometer 29.32.
- Friday*
2 July Calm morning. Albert & I went out to N.W. Bay. "Glen" was the only dog privileged to come with us. One sea lion at Capstan Bay, about 300 yds from beach on hill. Three pugs at Middle Bay. After lunch set out with a spare window from hut (for our new hut) & some kauri planks for boat. Did not waste time on way home. Heavy rain started when we were in Sth Col paddock. Saw the old mare in the Col scrub. Home 4 pm. Rain now ceased. Paul has been working on hut all day. By the way, recognised one of the newly imported rams today on Col. Barometer 29.44.

- Saturday*
3 July A good day though dull. In forenoon I boiled tar & tarred inside of dinghy; did an odd job or two in the shed & spent afternoon on fences in yards. Paul & Albert have been working on new shed all day. We have noticed a lengthening of the days already. Barometer 29.96.
- Sunday*
4 July E'ly wind this morning; rain set in after mid-day; now continuing; with wind freshening; a miserable night. In forenoon I "scrubbed out" : later chopped wood. Afternoon mended a pair of "go ashore" shoes for Albert. Barometer 29.28.
- Monday*
5 July Severe gale from E'ly last night; but no damage worthy of note done. In forenoon I cut out a new gate for Filholl side of Cave Rocks paddock; but did not assemble same a[s] wood was yet wet. Spent afternoon on new shed with Albert & Paul. Put the roof on today; she approaches completion. Wind from N.W. today with misty rain at times. Barometer 29.2.
- Tuesday*
6 July A calm morning: after Paul & I had ground axes, we rowed to Terror Pt, bringing back a load of rails & stakes. One sea lion at the Pt.: took to water when we arrived; but took a great interest in our boat as he swam about for some time. Unloaded dinghy after dinner; Paul & I later mustering out Beeman for sheep for house. After usual amount of trouble "landed one". Home @ 4 pm; so did not kill to-day. Now E'ly wind & heavy rain. Barometer 29.34.
- Wednesday*
7 July Calm morning after heavy rain & E'ly wind last night. We have been working on the hut all day. In forenoon Paul & I completed flooring of hut. After dinner I killed that sheep & later did one or two odd jobs to hut. Now N.E. breeze. Barometer 29.04.
- Thursday*
8 July Good morning: fine though dull. I have been working on shipping paddock fence, making repairs & extending fence. I have finished that job. Paul & Albert to-day completed hut. We had some sunshine for a short spasm to-day. Barometer 29.04.
- Friday*
9 July It has been a decent day, at times sunshine, with N'ly breeze. After breakfast Paul & I rowed to "Frenchman's grave" bringing back a load of firewood, or rather Paul brought it back: I walked home, there being not sufficient room in boat. Paul had a hard pull home against wind. Albert had been working at home. In afternoon we three went to Beeman for another load of wood. We have had a day replenishing our last decreasing wood pile. Albert & Paul attempted a burn at Beeman: not successful. Barometer 29.16.
- Saturday*
10 July Quite a decent day: light S'ly in forenoon turning to E'ly before night (evening would sound better). In forenoon Paul & I rowed down harbour bringing back two loads of wood (one at a time!) one from Bushy Pt., & one from Beeman. In afternoon we made a stone path in front of new hut & later reinforced stone wall from beach with a few boulders which we jacked up from beach. Glimpses of sun throughout day. Barometer (ommitted) [sic].

- Sunday*
11 July A miserable day: E'ly wind & rain all day. Did washing in forenoon & had a boxing lesson after dinner & chopped a little wood (rather Albert chopped it). Poultry for dinner to-day. They are the only events to-day, worthy of chronicle. Barometer 28.86.
- Monday*
12 July Again a miserable day: still E'ly, tho rain not as heavy as yesterday: now abating. Shed work all day. I made a new gate for Filholl, which I have yet to tar, & between showers Paul & I carried the two ton of salt from wool shed to new hut. Albert has been steaming new timbers for repairs to the "*Hilda*". Barometer 28.4.
- Tuesday*
13 July It has been a glorious day: calm, with sunshine practically all day, after heavy rain last night. Exceptionally good tide to-day. We have been doing "odd jobs" all day. Carried stores from shed to new hut: painted top sides of dinghy. Carried more stones to re-inforce sea wall (until the hand-barrow broke) Boxing lesson before tea. Barometer 29.32.
- Wednesday*
14 July It has been a decent day after rain last night. We have been out shepherding on Duma to-day. Sheep seem in tip-top condition: saw one marked ram in Duma valley. Home @ 5 pm. Now raining again. Saw eight wild duck at Venus Cove. Barometer 28.26 and falling.
- Thursday*
15 July A beautifully clear night last night. To-day a very cold day: wind S'ly, glimpses of sunshine & one or two light sleet showers. Spent day doing odd jobs between shed, yard & house. I killed two drakes for table. Still fine: cold S'ly. Barometer 28.8.
- Friday*
16 July Keen morning with light S'ly: snow on tops. We three rowed beyond Terror Point in search of pugs for "dog feed". Shot two which we brought back per boat. A very stiff breeze sprang up. A stiff pull home. Severe "jobble" [jabble; choppiness] off Terror Pt.: quite rough. I forgot to mention Albert took "Kelso" with him. After dinner "stored" seal meat, & prepared two oil drums in readiness for "trying out" seal blubber. "Glen" was to-day caught stealing (& eating) hens' (or rather one) hen's egg; such departure from honesty bringing him a surely deserved "hiding". Now N.W. wind with very heavy rain showers. Have noticed an appreciable difference in length of days these last two weeks. A fair display of "Southern Lights" to-night. Barometer 29.12.
- Saturday*
17 July Misty morning: wind N.W. : one! or perhaps a few light rain showers during day. We have spent day about shed. In forenoon I was "trying out" that blubber: later painted the new gate for Filholl; a few odd jobs also occupied part of the day & before tea we found time to dress that brace of duck I killed earlier in the week. N.W. wind continuing: & fine. Barometer 29.58.
- Sunday*
18 July Severe S.W. wind all day & now continuing. Rain threatening all day. In forenoon "scrubbed out", & chopped wood. After dinner cut some rails in readiness for a rustic fence that I am going to build in my spare time (along the edge of the lawn). It should look quite alright when I have it

finished. Also had a boxing lesson before tea. Poultry for dinner to-day. Barometer 29.74.

Monday
19 July A calm morning turning to a beautiful day: sun shone practically all day; but for short periods when fog drifted over. Very warm; a real “summer’s” day. Indeed the weather here has altogether so far surprised me in its mildness for Winter. We rowed to Honey Beach, whence we set out for Sth. Pt. A remarkable number of sheep on Filholl side of Honey or rather face of Honey opp. Filholl. Saw one woolley & also one intensely black hoggett. “Whistled up” sheep. Mustered back from Sth. Point on way home. Saw some half dozen woollies here. Sheep seem in good nick. Home at 5 pm. & quite tired. A great day on the hill. Barometer 30.1.

Tuesday
20 July Calm morning. Paul & I rowed over to Beeman, where we mustered up sheep bringing two back for killing. I walked back from Beeman along the beach. Exceptionally low tide. By dogs discovered a “pug” making for the water in the first bay beyond house. I “stoned” him, & “cut my stick” [went off] for my rifle: exit seal while he was yet stunned. Paul & I later towing him back in the dinghy. After dinner cut seal up for “dog tucker” & then killed the two sheep. Before finishing for day I rowed to Beeman bringing back a load of stakes we had already cut. Dull all day; but no rain. Barometer 30.3. Very high.

Wednesday
21 July Dull morning with N’ly breeze. I have been working all day in the yards; renovating & altering fences. It has not been too warm outside to-day. The remainder of the “Co” has been occupied with the boat. No rain to speak of with N’ly continuing. Barometer 29.74.

Thursday
22 July Sharp morning with cold S’ly after heavy rain showers last night. After breakfast, we three rowed over to the “Observatory” whence we made our way to Sth. Pt. & back of Honey. Arrived at end of beat in 2 hrs. 2 min - which is some record - not wasting any time. Frost & ice on higher levels. Mustered up sheep on way home, driving out from scrub well down towards sea. Saw a few “woollies”. Home towards 5.30 pm. A good day on the hill. Barometer 30.1.

Friday
23 July Calm morning. Rowed to Nellie’s Rest, where we pulled up the dinghy. Roused up sheep on far end of Peaks. A strenuous pull home against a heavy N.W. breeze. A beautiful day with bright sunshine. We have had a good week as far as weather is concerned. By the way it was a beautiful moonlight night last night. Surely we shall have to pay for all the unseasonably good weather. Barometer 29.9.

Saturday
24 July Rain last night. Fine with N.W. wind this morning. Paul & I shepherded over Nth. Col. in forenoon. Home at 1.15 pm. Afternoon in yards & about shed. Chopped wood before tea. Run is very dry after this fine spell. Barometer 29.6.

Sunday
25 July A decent day. Breeze from N’ly. Sunshine during later part of afternoon. In forenoon did my washing & swept out. Before dinner I made a new

- butt plate for my rifle, made from a piece of ash. In afternoon doctored my foot, a cut in which thru inattention has become poisoned. However it is better to-day than yesterday. Spent afternoon in bed. Quiet day. Barometer 29.96.
- Monday*
26 July Wind N.W. all day. Not a bad day, but a little rain toward evening. I had a "day off" to-day, the foot not being to good yet; but hope to get a boot on to-morrow. Helped Bill with a few domestic duties in forenoon; did a little boot repairing & other mending after "déjeuner" [lunch]. Barometer 30.
- Tuesday*
27 July Cold W'ly to-day. Rain showers in forenoon; but afternoon fine. Cold towards evening & now rain showers again. Spent forenoon in going thru vegetables. Our potatoes have kept particularly well. We value & look after vegetables here as we cannot grow any. Afternoon occupied "odd jobs" (perhaps vague). Foot is now again O.K. Barometer 30.
- Wednesday*
28 July Fine morning with cold S.W. wind. Set out for Duma where we mustered up sheep. On way home mustered out some 19 "stragglers" from Cave Rocks, driving same to Garden Creek. Left one ram which would not drive. Ram in no way branded. Heavy shower while in Cave Rocks. Home at 2 pm. In afternoon I painted lining of the dinghy & before tea chopped some wood. Some very heavy showers & severe "willy was" [squalls] in afternoon. Air very "raw". Will now cut Bill's hair. Barometer 29.58.
- Thursday*
29 July It has been a miserably boisterous day with cold S'ly wind & sleet showers with glimpses of sun; but not for more than a few minutes. Snow on higher levels this morning. We have spent the day cleaning out gratings in the wool sheds. Boxing lesson before tea. Cut Albert's hair to-night, so you can see I have been doing "some" barbering lately. "Tibby", one of Albert's dogs broke loose about mid-day & is still posted as "missing", although he has been diligently sought for. Still showery. Barometer 29.74.
- Friday*
30 July A day - "not much to write home about". Light mist & rain showers with cold S'ly. Put in day making extensive repairs & renovation to verandah of house, which job occupied our attention until 4 pm. Then, taking our dogs, we set out in different directions to look for the elusive "Tibby", who, up to this time, had failed to put in an appearance. I went out via Nth. Col. However Albert eventually found him in Home paddock. Noticed to-day first appearance of the growth of lily "shooting". Barometer 29.76.
- Saturday*
31 July In forenoon I painted inside of dinghy & spent afternoon assisting in erection of a cupboard at the end of the verandah. Cupboard to hold cooking utensils. To-day, N'ly wind & mist on tops. Barometer 29.6.
- Sunday*
1 August A terrible day. Very heavy rain & a gale from N'ly until about 4 pm., when weather moderated. Now mist. A very quiet day: did not venture much outside. In forenoon I prepared a few more rails for my rustic

fence (I have been patiently waiting for a favourable Sunday to erect same). Had a boxing lesson later & before tea chopped some wood. Barometer 28.8.

Monday
2 August

Just a little snow on tops this morning. Sharp S'ly breeze: milder later in day: sunshine during afternoon. A decent day. Albert & Paul have been away to N.W. Bay all day: they brought back a load of timber from one of the old huts. I went over to Depôt & brought in those sheep which we brought in from Cave Rocks the other day. Selected one wether & killed him for house. A fine sheep. Then painted the new cupboard at end of verandah. Spent remainder of day repairing South fence in yards. "Glen" came out with me for those sheep this morning. I put him around the sheep & he shaped alright; but perhaps he is a bit young yet for initiation. Barometer 29.54.

Tuesday
3 August

Reveille 7.30 am to-day. Day just breaking, Light S'ly. After breakfast we three walked out as far as "Smoky" on Azimuth rounding up sheep on way. Saw two black sheep. Some very pretty rainbow effects over N.W. Bay. Northern high levels under snow. To-day saw a sea hawk (skua gull) flying high & due Nth. First of season. These gulls are peculiar to Stewart Is. & islands Sth. They disappear from here for about three months in year. They are death on lambs & naturally we reciprocate that feeling towards them. To return. Arrived home at 12.30 pm & in afternoon Paul & I rowed to back of Beeman for load of wood. Saw a dead sheep in the kelp; no accounting for how it got there. A sea lion followed us all the way home. Seemed very interested in our dinghy. On one occasion he breeched fully two feet clear of water: first I have seen do that. Albert came out with the gun but we could not entice him near enough for a shot. Unloaded our wood & after putting in half an hour in yards, finished for day. Still cold S'ly. Barometer 29.62.

Wednesday
4 August

A fine morning. Rowed down harbour on Peaks side rousing up sheep. A heavy swell beyond Terror Pt., run from S.E. Rowed as far as Nellie's Rest. where there was one sea lion: a very big one. Many penguin tracks above beach. Calm at high water, when we set out for home, the total absence of the seemingly inevitable head wind being worthy of chronicle. Now a calm night with light rain showers. Barometer 29.76.

Thursday
5 August

A beautiful morning. Calm morning: sunshine: a real "Summer's" morning. Exceptional weather. Paul & I set out for the "Hole of Paris", which we mustered out: some 50 sheep, including some branded wethers. Some new falls of earth & rubble above beach in "Hole". Picked up some specimens of coal. Also noticed some good examples of petrified shell on beach. By the way, two light showers of snow on way out; but rest of day ideal. Mustered Duma sheep into "Basin" on way home. Cattle well up on Col to-day. Three wild duck at Garden Creek. Home at 5.30 pm. Barometer 29.5.

- Friday*
6 August Dull morning: calm. Mist coming over in showers from N.W. Cleared after breakfast when we set out for Monumental Head, rowing as far as the Observatory in the dinghy. Mustered in sheep from Head & thru. Lake Valley. Sheep travelling well & in good nick. Home via Filholl at 5 pm. Quite a good day on hill. I forgot to mention that yesterday Paul & I saw on Duma an albatross feeding the young bird. The young birds are now showing feathers. Barometer 29.32.
- Saturday*
7 August Heavy rain this morning tho. fine after breakfast: continuing so, with sunshine in afternoon. S'ly all day: cold towards evening. Paul & I carted or carried binding clay from beach to crush yard, which job we finished about 4 pm. Chopped wood before finishing for day. Barometer 29.24.
- Sunday*
8 August A bitterly cold & raw day. Quite miserable out of doors. S'ly wind all day with attempts at sleet showers. In forenoon I scrubbed out our room & did my washing. In afternoon took my rifle & went for a walk as far as Beeman (accompanied by my dogs). Nothing to shoot, by the way. Came across a cast sheep (in a bad way) in Nth Col, about 100 yds from house. Carried him as far as woolshed. He is now designated as "dog tucker" [dogfood]. A boxing lesson before tea. Barometer 29.48.
- Monday*
9 August Dull morning: Paul & I mustered in culls from Nth. Col: all mustered in Garden Creek paddock. Shedded up sheep & picked out eight for "dog tucker", Albert driving remainder on run at Sth. Col. Paul & I killed the eight culls: later launched the dinghy & put remainder of day in on the "*Hilda*". Afternoon beautifully fine & calm: bright sunshine. Barometer 29.78. {Launched Dinghy.}
- Tuesday*
10 August Morning threatening; though later change for better: quite a decent day calm & warm. We rowed as far as the Observatory, whence we set out for Sq. Hill (shepherding). Roused up sheep & burnt tussock on way home. Out fires extended from mouth of Lake, where were three very large "pugs", to well up on face of Filholl. Home @ 6 pm. Fine display of "Southern Lights" to-night. Barometer 29.78.
- Wednesday*
11 August Dull, calm morning turning to light rain showers, which continued at intervals during day. Paul & I, taking Depôt dinghy rowed to back of Beeman, where we cut a load of wood. Albert took other dinghy & rowed to Frenchman's Grave to cut kindling wood. Albert found a leopard on the beach (about 8 ft), & killing same towed him home. In afternoon, Paul & I brought another load of wood from Beeman & later cut up leopard for "dog's meat". Barometer 29.4.
- Thursday*
12 August A miserably cold day. S.E. wind with sleet & snow showers all day. One of the coldest day[s] we have had yet. Paul & I, taking our dogs with us, walked to Frenchman's Grave, & cut kindling wood. Albert rowed boat around & Paul took back a load of wood. Spent afternoon on boat. Chopped wood & found time for a boxing lesson before tea. Snow showers continuing. First hawk of the season to alight in vicinity of

house this evening, made off before Paul could get a shot at him. Barometer 29.66.

Friday
13 August Snow on tops this morning with S'ly wind. One or two slight snow showers during day: cold day. Bill has been unwell yesterday & to-day - but is now improving. I cooked breakfast this morning, Bill having a day or rather the morning off. As a "sighter" Paul & I rowed to Beeman, where we mustered up wethers bringing one back which later I killed for house. Paul had an accident up at Beeman, falling out of the dinghy while trying to beach her: he said the water was cold! Before dinner unloaded wood that Paul had boated from Frenchman's Grave. In afternoon Paul & I (again!) - cut a load of green wood from Garden Creek. Chopped wood before tea. In evening, taking guns & dogs, Paul & I (once again) went for a stroll to head of bay in search of hawks: but were unsuccessful in that direction. Albert shot first hawk of season to-day. Barometer 29.76. 1st Hawk of Season.

Saturday
14 August Quite a decent morning with glass falling slightly. Weather still S'ly. In forenoon Paul & I roused up sheep in Col valley & Nth. Col. returning home at about 2 pm. One snow shower; but nothing to speak of. Saw three hawks; but they are not as yet by any means numerous. Spent afternoon on that seemingly eternal job: "the boat". Chopped wood before tea. In evening, with gun & dogs, went for a stroll to Garden Creek. Saw four duck at mouth of creek; but could not get near enough for a shot. Barometer 29.54.

Sunday
15 August Cold breeze: S'ly. Some slight rain showers. Spent forenoon "scrubbing out" & chopping wood. In afternoon made a commencement on that rustic fence in front of lawn. Did not work long: too cold out. A good "spar" [boxing] before tea finished a quiet day. Barometer 29.7.

Monday
16 August Rain overnight. Weather N.W. with slight rain showers. Boat building all day. A quiet day. Barometer 29.74.

Tuesday
17 August Mist on tops this morning. Wind W'ly with light rain showers during day. Albert unwell to-day, so had morning off. He is now about O.K. Spent day on boat, the planking of which is now about half way through. Barometer 29.42.

Wednesday
18 August Heavy rain showers overnight. Too wet to do anything beyond shed, so put another day in on boat, a job that must be finished before the season when it is an absolute necessity to have a boat. Weather W.N.W. to-day, with a little rain. Went for a walk to Garden Creek after tea, taking the "breech" with me; but got no shot at the wary ducks. Barometer 29.3.

Thursday
19 August Rain & sleet showers overnight. Wind varying from S'ly to N.W. before day was out. That is a big variation for one day. Yet another day on boat, the planking of which is now completed but for one plank. She is looking O.K. again. Bill took a couple of photos of her as she stands in the shed. At low water a sea leopard came up at the Shipping wharf. Albert saw him, & I went up to house for my rifle. Albert took one or

two “snaps” of him before I shot him. He had evidently been fighting, one of his flippers & his side being very badly lacerated. He was still bleeding when we first approached him. Left him there until high water. He is no faster than the “pug seal” out of water so he was easy shooting. After tea Albert & I rowed over to Beeman, where the leopard had drifted. Towed him to the punt where he now “lies in state”. Slight showers during day. Barometer 29.4.

Friday
20 August Mild morning: calm: Island under snow more particularly the Nth. end. Beautiful sunshine until about 3 pm., when slightly overclouded. One of our best days since the boat left. Everything is dated here by arrival & departure of the boat! Spent day on boat until about four o'clock, when we cut up that leopard for dog's meat. In evening Paul & Albert went fishing on the wharf (“catch”: some 8 fish). I took a stroll with my dogs to Garden Creek where I shot a wild duck, old “Clyde” retrieving same for me from water. On way home thru Depôt paddock came across an old wether “scragg”, which took to the water. I launched dinghy; but he drowned before I reached him. In terribly poor condition. Skinned him for dogs. Now a beautiful evening. Barometer 29.36.

Saturday
21 August Dull morning after rain overnight; wind N.W. Towards mid-day heavy rain set in, same still continuing. We do not get much of the heavy rain here: more usually misty rain. Boat building to-day. Barometer 29.64.

Sunday
22 August Calm morning turning to a beautiful day: flat calm all day, with bright sunshine in afternoon: sun very warm. In forenoon I “washed” & chopped some wood. Our wood pile is at a low ebb. In afternoon, taking “Glen” with me, rowed dinghy to Terror Pt., bringing home a load of rails to complete my rustic fence. I have made quite a few references to that fence. Anyone reading that would no doubt, have reason to imagine it is something wonderful. However, home @ 5.30 pm. Now a light E'ly. Albert was over Col to-day & from the saddle saw no less than five whales in N.W. Bay. Barometer 29.44. {5 Whales @ N.W.}

Monday
23 August A miserable morning: heavy rain overnight continuing all day with light E'ly. A real heavy flood rain, worthy of the name of a “West Coaster” [South Island, New Zealand]. A severe change from yesterday. Boat building to-day. Barometer 29.

Tuesday
24 August Calm morning after rain overnight. Paul & I rowed to Bushy Pt. bringing back a load of firewood. Heavy rain set in at Midday. Albert had rowed to Beeman where he mustered wethers, bringing same home & shedding up. After dinner drafted wethers, keeping a dozen for killing: putting remainder in Depôt paddock. Some are going back in condition hence drafting & keeping only what are necessary. Paul & I then killed sheep for house, afterwards overhauling all pelts on hand. Found rats had been interfering with them (& we have about six cats at the woolshed). Finished day on boat. Evening fine & calm. Albert & I took killing sheep to Beeman, & on arrival home had a good “spar” with Paul. I then went

- up to Beeman & brought back the dinghy. Quite a busy day. Raining again. Barometer 29.3.
- Wednesday*
25 August Dull morning: calm. Before mid-day wind from N.W. & in afternoon heavy rain. Now a gale from N.E. with rain. Boat building until about about 4 pm when I took advantage of a lull to chop some wood. Barometer 29.02.
- Thursday*
26 August Last night glass dropped quickly, wind changing from N.E. to E'ly. And then we got it: a great gale all night & she can blow. The boats had been lashed down as a precaution; & we were relieved to find everything secure this morning. Heavy rain & E'ly wind all day: most miserable weather. Everything is soaking after this spell. E'ly is our worst weather as we have very little shelter from it. Fortunately it is not a frequent (occurrence) sorry! (occurrence) One of our young ducks died to-day, it is feared as a result of bad weather. Another was pretty far through but she (he) revived as a result of a position in a box in kitchen. Spent forenoon caulking boat. & in afternoon Albert & I cleaned out loft, overhauled woolpacks, which are O.K., & later put some half dozen struts in loft to strengthen roof. A useful job. Boxing lesson before tea. Still heavy rain. Barometer 28.24.
- Friday*
27 August Heavy rain overnight with wind changing to S'ly. This morning snow covering Island well down. Heavy snow & sleet showers to-day; but now calm with promise of clearing to-morrow. In forenoon I cleaned out water tables about house. Tared the boat in the afternoon. In evening prepared some rails for the inevitable subject: the rustic fence. Now a moonlight night. Barometer 28.5.
- Saturday*
28 August Slight frost last night. Tops still heavily under snow. Wind a cold S'ly. For a "sighter" Paul & I mustered out Garden Creek, driving thru Cave Rocks. Sheep got out of hand so we left what we had in front of us & going back made a muster of the Cave Rocks, there being a few other sheep there also: in poor condition; however put 16 out top gate & a few out Filholl gate. Quite a satisfactory "clean up". Home @ 2 pm. In afternoon gave Albert a little assistance to swing a new front door on house & before tea Paul & I rowed to the Frenchman's Grave bringing back a load of gravel for the paths. Chopped a goodly supply of wood in evening. By the way saw three hawks & four ducks a[t] Garden Creek to-day. Barometer 28.98.
- Sunday*
29 August N.W. wind & heavy rain showers all day & still continuing. A miserable day. In forenoon I spent an hour cleaning up the wool-shed & scrubbed out our room. In afternoon did one or two odd jobs to fill in time. Barometer 28.84.
- Monday*
30 August Quite a decent morning: no rain to speak of to-day: wind N.W. with variation to W'ly. Paul & I spent forenoon rousing up sheep over Nth. Col. No lambs as yet. At back of Col there has been a big slip. About a quarter acre of land has slipped over a cliff (200 ft drop) & must have

been quite a recent happening as the sea is still discoloured by the talus. However home @ 1 pm. In afternoon painted our new front door & then, taking "Glen" with me went out to new Depôt fence, where I painted all the standards, a precaution against rusting of wire. Boxing before tea. Saw a jack hawk to-day. Barometer 29.74.

- Tuesday*
31 August Dull morning: Later heavy mist which continued all day. We have been rousing sheep up over Duma & Nth. Col. Home @ 4 pm. Saw cattle on home side of Col, which is a very rare occurrence. Quite a number of hawks at Garden Creek. In evening which turned out fine, I put in an hour finishing my rustic fence. Wind now N.W. Barometer 29.94.
- Wednesday*
1 September Morning very threatening, in fact so all day, though no rain fell. Severe N'y wind. I spent forenoon in Nth. Col, where I took out & coiled an old wire in the fence (wire broken in numerous places) & made everything ready for putting in new wire. Also took measurements for a new gate out there & in afternoon started to make same. "Knocking off" early, Paul & I carted a few loads of gravel to top of terrace. In evening took a stroll as far as Garden Creek, my object being to shoot hawks; but could not get near enough to them to shoot. Barometer 29.6.
- Thursday*
2 September N'y wind all day. Afternoon bright sunshine for a couple of hours. Mist on tops all day. In forenoon finished making that gate: have yet to tar same & in afternoon commenced a job repairing the boarding at head of dip. Boxing after tea. Barometer 29.68.
- Friday*
3 September Strong N'y wind to-day with heavy mist. Rowing over to Observatory we set out for Sth. Point rousing up sheep on way back. Could not do much owing to mist. Albert saw two lambs above scrub on Sth. Pt. First of season. Home at 5 pm. Not a very pleasant day. Now rain showers. By the way we had a small bet in tobacco as to who would see first lamb of season so Albert collected! Barometer 29.84. {II [i.e. two] Lambs Sth. Pt.}
- Saturday*
4 September Quite an ordinary day. Wind N.W. with but one rain shower towards evening. In forenoon I continued on my job at the dip. & in afternoon tarred inside of boat; which is now completed but for another coat of tar on bottom sides: also tarred new gate for Sth. Col. Quite a "tarry" day. Barometer 29.72.
- Sunday*
5 September Quite a decent day. Breeze from Sth; cold in forenoon but sunshine for an hour or so in afternoon. "Scrubbed out" & did my washing in forenoon & after dinner we three taking our dogs went over to Beeman & spent afternoon burning off tussock. Quite a good "burn". Boxing after tea. Barometer 30.16 and rising.
- Monday*
6 September Revaille earlier this morning. Not a bad morning, tho. perhaps somewhat threatening with N.W. wind all day. We set out for Penguin Creek Via Duma rousing up sheep on way: saw no lambs. Came upon a cast hogget on Duma. It had been there since last night: to all appearances anyway. A "Nellie" was picking him; but made off as we

approached. It is seldom they attack anything so far from sea. Continuing on we set fires from top of hill down to creek; burning a track, which job was our object in going out there. We then made for N.W. Bay where we made a cup of tea at hut. Set fires on Judge & Chair; but did not have much success in that direction. Saw no less than nine whales in Bay; but did not get as good a view of same as usual to-day, they being well off shore & water was rough. At Capstan Bay there was a sea elephant on beach, which has been well washed of its sand after recent heavy weather. However, he unfortunately made for water before we could get a good view of him. He reminded me very much of a hippopotamus as far as his head was concerned. One sea lion in scrub above beach. However home at 6.30 pm, after a most interesting & enjoyable day. Barometer 29.78. 9 Whales N.W. Bay.

Tuesday
7 September

Heavy rain overnight. Morning misty wind N'y. Spent forenoon in preparing & putting in lining of boat. Cleared after dinner, so taking dinghy & Depôt boat went to Bushy Pt, for firewood. Just as our load was ready heavy rain set in: we had a rough & unpleasant row home. Of course it cleared again when we reached home. Unloaded wood & finished for day. The main spring of our gramophone broke the other night. Fortunately we had a spare one which Albert has fitted, so we shall not be deprived of our music. I forgot to mention we saw four lambs on the Peaks to-day. Last two sentences are not in sympathy at all. Barometer 29.28.

Wednesday
8 September

Heavy rain overnight: very heavy! Wind about S.W. to-day; with one or two slight rain showers. Not a very pleasant day. This morning I heated tar & tarred out lining of boat. Spent afternoon in odd jobs & also continued; but did not, owing to lack of timber complete that boarding for dip. Tarred same as far as I have gone. Boxing before tea. A good "spar". Cut Albert's hair in evening! Is that item worthy of chronicle? Barometer 29.28.

Thursday
9 September

Quite an ordinary day. Misty with Nth. wind. "Odd jobs" occupied our forenoon & after dinner, Paul & I brought, per boat, a wether from Beeman, I later killed him for house. I took my young dog "Glen" across to Beeman to-day. Had no difficulty in "casting" him out [wide sweep around stock]; but of course he is not fully under command yet. I have great hopes for him. In evening put new "stays" on our clothes line posts on "Terrace" & painted same. By the way, the boat that we have repaired has undergone a change of name. Formerly she was the "*Hilda*" but is now known as the "*Uno*"! That is quite a joke. Barometer 29.52

Friday
10 September

Misty again this morning. Spent whole day on back fence of Nth. Col. paddock. In forenoon ran a new wire on fence & spent afternoon "re-staking" same. Also made commencement on a break fence from bottom corner of fence at beach. Barometer 29.2.

- Saturday*
11 September A beautiful day. Veritably “one out of the box” (& it had been in that box for quite a time). In forenoon finished the “break” fence & in afternoon painted store & roof of house. Bright sunshine all day & a perfect evening. Boxing after tea. Albert & Paul have been fishing & have just arrived home with a good “catch”. Barometer 29.22.
- Sunday*
12 September A misty dull day with N’ly breeze. Put in an hour on wood pile in forenoon & in afternoon went for a stroll as far as Honey Beach with my dogs. Barometer 28.58.
- Monday*
13 September Cold S’ly this morning. In forenoon we carted gravel from beach to yards. In afternoon I tarred bottom sides of the “*Uno*”, which is now ready for launching. Put in remainder of day tarring rails in yards. Sunshine between showers. One very heavy one just @ 5 pm. Chopped wood before tea. A quiet day. Barometer 29.02.
- Tuesday*
14 September A terrible day. Wind veering from W. to Sth. – a gale & still continuing. Showers during day. Towards mid-afternoon it turned very cold & we have had heavy snow showers since. Back to Winter again. All taps frozen since 3 pm. Day spent in “odd” jobs about shed. Albert has made a set of quoits. I put in a pleasant half hour playing Albert after tea to-night. Barometer 28.78.
- Wednesday*
15 September Island under snow this morning with S’ly wind. Bitterly cold. Altogether a terrible day. Revaille late this morning: could do nothing in weather like this. Hope for a change as soon as possible as lambing will shortly be at its height. Weather like that of the last two days would interfere with the %’age. In forenoon I painted woodwork in sitting room in preparation for “Spring” cleaning. Paul had an unsuccessful search for dog tucker (in shape of a “pug” seal.) about the Bays near at hand. In afternoon replenished our wood pile with a load each from Nth. Col. paddock. Boxing before tea. To-day, I think, has been the coldest one of my experience. Barometer 29.3.
- Thursday*
16 September Another miserable day. Heavy rain overnight. S’ly wind all day with sleet & snow showers & bitterly cold wind. As a “sighter”, Paul & I brought in one solitary “scrag” from Nth. Col. paddock. Later I killed him for “dog tucker”. Spent remainder of day in “odd” jobs. A quiet & unpleasant day. Barometer 28.78.
- Friday*
17 September Spent whole day cutting a track thru. scrub on Nth. Col., which job we completed just at 5 pm. A decent job, which no doubt will be an aid for us in our mustering. Heavy snow showers all day; but fortunately we had plenty of shelter where we were working. Now very cold S’ly. Saw some very big drives of shags to-day. Island completely under snow. Barometer 29.38.
- Saturday*
18 September A keen morning. Fairly calm. Taking boat, rowed as far as second creek on Honey. Could not land at Terror Pt. – run of about 5 ft. drop after severe S’ly weather of last two days. Six sea lions in scrub. Took some “snaps” of them. Drove two to beach & killed them for dogs. Stiff head

breeze on way home. Heavy surf at Heads. Glimpses of sun on way home, which we reached at 1.30 pm. In afternoon, taking the two dinghys, we brought a good load of wood from head of harbour. A most useful day's work. In evening I rowed up Home Bay, bringing back a load of peats for the cook's range. Then put in an hour chopping wood. Albert & Bill are developing films to-night. Barometer 29.54.

Sunday
19 September

A heavy flood rainfall day. One of our wettest days. In forenoon I "scrubbed out" & in afternoon did my washing. Our cook has been confined to bed to-day unwell. Rain still continuing. A quiet Sunday. Barometer 29.08.

Monday
20 September

I was "cook" for breakfast this morning. Bill better today: was up at mid-day & was able to "carry on". Paul & I went over to that track at Nth. Col & threw up the scrub on it. Finished about 2 pm., Albert having come over in afternoon. Returned home when remainder of day was spent in odd jobs & carting gravel to paths. Boxing after tea. Had my nose knocked about, so will have to have a spell until it heals. Later went with my dogs to Nth. Col in search of "Clyde", who has been missing since mid-day. Did not find him: a good "hiding" awaits him. Drizzle in forenoon, but afternoon fine. A beautiful evening. Came across a "cast" hoggett at Col. Barometer 29.32.

Tuesday
21 September

Perfect calm with mist showers all day. Taking the two dinghys we went a far as Bushy Pt., bringing back two good loads of heavy wood. Unloaded wood after dinner. The wood pile looks quite "healthy" at present. Then Paul & I went over to Beeman bringing back a sheep which I later killed for house. In good condition. Saw a number of lambs at back of Beeman. Chopped wood before finishing for day. A perfect evening. We espied a sea elephant making up harbour. He made to head of Bay. We took our rifles & put a few "22's" into him; but he made off. We next saw him off Shipping wharf. Launched dinghy & made after him taking the "Snider" rifle [an early breech-loading rifle] with us. Paul shot him & we took him in tow; but he came to life again, so we had to cast off, as there was danger of him upsetting the boat. Put two more shots into him; but he sank, so we came home disappointed. He was about 15 ft long & covered with scars. An exciting event. Barometer 29.5.

Wednesday
22 September

Dull, calm day with drizzle showers. I spent whole day white washing inside of wood shed. A regular "Tom Sawyer" day. Went for a stroll to Garden Creek in evening. Saw two ducks out there. Barometer 29.52.

Thursday
23 September

To-day we commenced clearing the fence line for a 500 yards. break fence running from back fence of Beeman up towards the "Brothers" on the Peaks. Carried out standards & commenced cutting track thru scrub. A decent day with sunshine in afternoon. A grand evening. Bill & I went for a stroll to Garden Creek. Saw only four geese, so conclude one is "sitting". "Kelso" has been missing since yesterday, & has not turned up yet, though we had glimpses of him on Peaks this afternoon. Barometer 29.72.

- Friday*
24 September Dull day with N'ly wind. have been working all day on our new fence. Set fires in Beeman on our way home. "Kelso" turned up this morning. Weather now threatening. Barometer 29.4.
- Saturday*
25 September Dull day with N'ly wind, rain setting in in evening: For a "sighter" I saw a small sea lion in tussock above beach about 200 yds. from house. Taking our rifles we soon despatched him for dog-meat. For a sea lion he was very timid. We had to be wary in approaching him. As a rule you have no difficulty in approaching them. This particular one had a very decent skin, exceptionally light in colour. I have kept it & am going to "do it up" for a mat for our room. The remainder of the morning I put in whitewashing at shed. In afternoon we boated & carried out wire to new fence line. Chopped wood before tea & in evening I fatted & salted that skin. Now heavy rain. Barometer 29.
- Sunday*
26 September Calm morning. I commenced re-papering our room, & was about half way through with it at about 3 pm. when I "knocked off". The day turned out quite decent. Bright sunshine until about 3 pm. To-day we launched the "*Uno*", a ceremony that we have looked forward to. Albert & I went for a short sail in her. Later I took my dogs out as far as Garden Creek. Was caught in a heavy shower. Paul had been "floundering" (catch 5). Now a perfect evening. Barometer 28.9.
- Monday*
27 September A very ordinary day with N'ly wind & occasional showers. I spent the whole day whitewashing at shed, which job is now completed & is a big improvement. At mid-afternoon a leopard made his appearance off the wharf; but, though he was inquisitive enough to "stay around" for quite a while, we did not get a shot at him. "Trilby", one of Albert's dogs, has taken ill, but we hope not seriously.
- Tuesday*
28 September A grand day; mild & calm with sunshine all afternoon. Good weather for lambing, which will now be at its height. We have been working all day on the new fence line, cutting the track & carrying out material. On way home at mid-day we found a small leopard in tussock at Head of Home Bay. I shot him on our way back in afternoon. This was evidently the one we saw off the wharf yesterday. It is very unfortunate that I have to record the death of Trilby. He died early this morning. It is a pity that such a useful dog should "go West" [to join the dead beyond the sunset] just before the beginning of the season. Barometer 29.98. High & rising.
- Wednesday*
29 September To-day N'ly wind & fine though perhaps threatening. In forenoon we carried out material to fence & ran out bottom wire, in the doing of which we met with much difficulty, as the going is not too good for running wire: too many gullies. In afternoon I rowed to Head of Bay & towed home that leopard, which we consigned to the "dog tucker" barrels. Then Paul & I painted roof of new store, & later chopped wood (& incidentally broke an axe handle). By the way, one of our geese has been missing for about a week. We are afraid she has died.

- Thursday*
30 September A day of N'ly breeze & mist showers. In forenoon Paul & I painted the ceiling of the sitting room. It having cleared off somewhat in the afternoon we repaired to the fence, when we cut another 50 yds. of track which is now complete. Saw a leopard at head of Bay on beach. A medium sized one with but one eye. We did not molest him. Both our ducks & hens are laying well just now, & the "fowl fruit" is very plentiful.
- Friday*
1 October A terrible day to herald in the new month. Heavy rain overnight. All day very heavy showers with S'ly gale. Albert & I spent day papering out the sitting room. It is now O.K. Great improvements. In evening I washed & stretched that sea lion skin. Still blowing hard.
- Saturday*
2 October A decent day. Morning dull; but sunshine in afternoon. For a "sighter" Paul & I brought two sheep from Beeman. Killed same in afternoon. Painted as much of the woolshed roof as time would allow. Chopped wood before finishing for day. Barometer 29.58.
- Sunday*
3 October Glass steady with N.W. breeze. Morning dull with mist showers; but afternoon quite bright. Forenoon: "scrubbed out" & did washing, while in afternoon I finished papering my room. Boxing after tea & later a walk as far as the "Three Brothers". Later, we went for a sail around the bay in the "*Uno*". Saw a leopard off shore about mid-day. Altogether a quiet Sunday.
- Monday*
4 October A grand day. Calm with sunshine in afternoon. Spent forenoon running wire at new fence. Saw twin lambs on Col. In afternoon we continued painting shed roof: not quite finished yet. Weather holding up, so will give paint a chance to dry. Albert was out at Honey beach for a stroll last night & found our missing goose. She is sitting & has seven eggs.
- Tuesday*
5 October Heavy showers overnight. A drying S.W. wind to-day. In forenoon we "cleaned up" the shed & spent remainder of morning in setting & grinding shears in readiness for commencement of season. Afternoon on new fence; quite a decent afternoon with sunshine.
- Wednesday*
6 October Very heavy showers overnight. Cold N.W. wind all day with rain showers. In forenoon we were occupied with "odd jobs" in woolshed. In afternoon Bill & I commenced re-papering kitchen while Paul & Albert were occupied at new fence. Good display of Aurora to-night. Barometer 28.62. Low!
- Thursday*
7 October Heavy hail showers overnight. Morning fine with sunshine tho. cold. S'ly wind. Paul & I spent forenoon at Nth. Col. cutting some seventy stakes which we carried to end of new fence line. Some good heavy stakes. We three went out to fence again in afternoon; but heavy snow showers came on so we "cut our stick" [went off] for home. I put in an hour before tea assisting Bill with a little more papering in the kitchen. A cold evening. Barometer 29.96.

- Friday*
8 October Dull morning after rain last night. We had just commenced staking & stapling at new fence when heavy mist & rain came on, so we made for home. In afternoon I again acted as “decorator’s” assistant to Bill in the kitchen, while Albert & Paul ground shears. Rain for remainder of day. Barometer 28.26. Low.
- Saturday*
9 October Last night we had an exceptionally good display of the “Aurora”; best I have seen yet. To-day, a terrible day; heavy wind & hail showers overnight. S.E. gale all day to-day; very severe gale; but now abating somewhat. Out worst gale yet. Afternoon dry. In forenoon Paul & I overhauled pelts & re-hung same in woolroom. Remainder of day “odd jobs”. A quiet day. Boxing & quoits after tea. Barometer 28.84.
- Sunday*
10 October Just a quiet Sunday. In forenoon I scrubbed out my dog kennels & after dinner, taking my dogs, went for a walk over Col way. Went as far as the saddle. Saw very few lambs. Came home via Garden Creek. Light rain showers & S’ly wind. Boxing & quoits after tea. Barometer 29.
- Monday*
11 October Dull morning after rain last night. Spent forenoon at Frenchman’s Grave, where we cut, bundled & carried to beach firewood in readiness for boating when opportunity affords. Intended to carry on in afternoon but heavy rain set in continuing until evening: now heavy mist. N’ly wind. Afternoon one or two odd jobs at shed & later helped Albert to “clean up” store. We noticed a great many gulls & “nellies” at Honey to-day. Feeding on the carcass of the sea elephant we shot some two weeks back. He has evidently drifted ashore over there. I shall row across first opportunity. Barometer 29.2.
- Tuesday*
12 October A gale from N.W. all day; but no rain tho. threatening. We spent all day at Frenchman’s Grave & now have a punt load of wood ready for boating. Albert took a stroll as far as Honey beach & had a look at the remains of the elephant. Fast approaching a skeleton. It has been “smoking” all day off Nellie’s Rest. A useful days work. Barometer 29.
- Wednesday*
13 October A grand day. Warm; bright sunshine with N.W. breeze. All day at new fence. In forenoon carried on with stapling while in afternoon we cut some “60” new stakes. In evening I went to Honey & had a look at the remains of our friend the sea elephant; brought back a bag of raddle clay [reddish, for sheep marking] from Honey beach. The best day we have had for some week or so. Barometer 28.98.
- Thursday*
14 October A miserable day. Quite the antithesis of yesterday. To bet on the weather here, is a certain way to lose money. One never knows what it is going to be. Mist & heavy rain with N.W. wind. The forenoon was showery. Carted gravel to yards & at low water continued building retaining wall at wharf. Afternoon, odd jobs at shed. Barometer 28.4. Low.
- Friday*
15 October Strong wind from N.W. to-day. Light rain at times in forenoon. Spent forenoon at fence, which is now nearing completion. Set out for fence again in afternoon but rain set in just as we arrived at the job, so “cut our

- stick”, bringing back a bundle of firewood each from Nth. Col. We are out of wood, & have had no opportunity to boat any from Frenchman’s Grave. Paul & I put in remainder of day making raddle. Boxing after tea.
- Saturday*
16 October Showery to-day. Weather from S’ly. Forenoon mild but afternoon colder. To-day saw our new fence completed. A decent job! On our way home, Albert & I, without dogs, attempted to muster Beeman for a house sheep. After a deal of chasing had to give it up; we were almost successful. Saw two gold finches to-day. First I have seen here. Still S’ly & showery.
- Sunday*
17 October To-day cold S’ly & showery. Did my washing in forenoon. In afternoon went for a stroll with my dogs. Not a very pleasant day. Had a “spar” after tea & later a game of quoits. Eleven chickens hatched to-day. Barometer 29.1. {Chickens.}
- Monday*
18 October Morning dull with severe W’ly wind & cold. Paul & I in forenoon carted stones to yards & spread same. In afternoon Albert & I, after a deal of trouble (& a good deal too) mustered Beeman & brought back one wether, which I later killed for house. Remainder of day I spent in “odd jobs” about yards. Our house cat “Black” accounted for one of the gold finches to-day. Paul in the evening assisting Bill to paper out his room. Now a grand evening. Calm & mild.
- Tuesday*
19 October A wet miserable day. A low glass with N’th’ly wind rain & mist. A day about shed. We have little more to do inside, so are hard put to it for a job on wet days. Weather seems to be brightening now.
- Wednesday*
20 October A day of W’ly wind & hail showers, with sunshine between times. In forenoon I put out all the gates in the yards. They had been in the shed all Winter. In afternoon we went over to Beeman bridge where we repaired same & also cut & tied down scrub on the track. One hail shower in the afternoon, when the hail stones were of phenomenal size, approaching the “pigeon’s egg” variety. Largest I have seen. Went as far as Garden Creek in evening when I was caught in a heavy shower. Glass fair. {Hailstones 1/2" diameter.}
- Thursday*
21 October A wet miserable day. Heavy rain showers at most frequent intervals. Gale (!) veering from N.W. to S’ly. In forenoon I made two dog chains. After mid-day Albert & I went out to Beeman where we finished (between showers) the repairing of the track. Saw a snipe at head of bay. Were within four yards of him & had an interesting look at him. First I have seen here. Glass rising. {Saw snipe today.}
- Friday*
22 October A fine day with steady glass & N. wind. For a sighter Albert & I went out to Cave Rocks, Paul rowing round in boat. Mustered up a few stragglers in search of “scraggs” for dog tucker. Boated back one, while another drove home. Before dinner I killed both for dogs. Paul also brought back some wood with him. Paul & I later carried out a new gate to South Col; bringing back a load of wood each. Chopped wood before tea & in

evening commenced building a new platform for my dog kennels. Barometer 29.1.

Saturday
23 October

A decent day though a little threatening for a start. One shower in morning. We have been out at the Square Hill track at the Lake all day. Quite a decent outing & a change: bright sunshine in afternoon. We boiled the "billy" at mid-day. Put in a good day widening bridges; filling in ditches & making scrub break fences. Saw many lambs on way out. At Honey Beach we caught the goose on her nest (& six goslings) & brought them home; one has since died. We have installed them in duck house. Last night Scott had seven pups, two of which were dead this morning; rest quite healthy so far. This evening I finished the dog kennel platform. Now a fine evening. {Six goslings hatched (1 dead). Scott 7 pups born (2 dead).}

Sunday
24 October

"The day of rest". In afternoon erected that platform at kennels. Boxing after tea. A miserable day. N'ly rain & mist. Heavy rain overnight. Another gosling dead this morning. Barometer 28.38.

Monday
25 October

A change from yesterday. Grand day. Sunshine at times. Light S'ly; freshening in afternoon. We have had a day amongst the firewood. Three loads from Frenchman's Grave (71 bundles) & one load of green wood from back of Beeman. Took a stroll as far as Head of the Bay in evening. A most satisfactory day. Barometer 29.54!

Tuesday
26 October

Morning dull; but brightening into a grand day with sunshine & light S'ly. We rowed to Observatory & then set out for the Lake Valley & Monumental Head. Sheep looking well: lambing in this block most satisfactory as far as we can see. Twins in quite a few cases. A good many sheep at Monumental Head. A huge sea elephant on beach. Had a good view of him. Albert "snapped" him before he made for water. Saw a young albatross on his way to the water. There are many "sooty" albatrosses building out that way. Home, tired at 5.30 pm. To-night the goose made for the water with her goslings; but Paul headed her off with the small dinghy. Goslings now O.K. after being dried before the fire. Now a beautiful evening. Barometer 29.8. Very High.

Wednesday
27 October

Dull in morning. Later in day rain & E'ly wind. We have been over at N.W. Bay to-day, where we have been repairing the hut in readiness for season. Lambing not too good so far on Col. Were caught in rain on way home. Still E'ly. Glass rising. Barometer 29.1.

Thursday
28 October

Morning dull. Carted gravel & clay to yards until mid-day. Afternoon brightening up, we sailed down harbour as far as the "big slip" on Honey. Afternoon later turned out fine; bright sunshine & flat calm. We took our dogs, Albert & I mustered out the scrub & Paul "held". Only one "double" which we boated home with a wether for house. Home at 5 pm. A very decent jaunt. A great evening. Paul went "floundering" but there was nothing doing. By the way, Scott's pups are doing fine.

- Friday*
29 October Morning flat calm & mist; rain overnight. In forenoon I killed those two sheep for house. Albert & I shored them. Two good fleeces & sheep in grand condition. Also repaired a fence in yard before dinner. In afternoon went out to Capstan Bay, where Paul shot one of the bulls. There are twelve cattle left including a calf of but two or three days of age. Paul caught her & earmarked her. This was the third time I have been out to shoot the bull since I came here! To-day we landed the mustard! [sic] We brought home the hide & some "steak" for our dogs. To-night we saw first young albatross in water, making his way up the Bay. He evidently thought that was the way out of the Harbour. This is the time the young ones make their way to the water. {"Shot" bull.}
- Saturday*
30 October Morning dull, with S'yly freshening toward mid-day. In forenoon Paul & I rowed to Honey Beach with the new gate for Cave Rocks paddock. Took some six stakes & Put them in fence where necessary. Also erected a "stile" I had made for the fence. Dropped a gate for the Dépôt paddock on way up. One shower in forenoon. Had a look for another goose which is evidently sitting; could not find her. In afternoon, taking our dogs, went as far as N.E. Harbour along Azimuth terraces in search of "double" fleeces. Bagged five. Home @ 6 pm. A decent jaunt. Afternoon fine. Another of Scott's pups died to-day. Barometer 29.38.
- Sunday*
31 October Dull day: wind N'yly. A quiet Sunday. In forenoon I did washing & Albert & I papered ceiling of our room. In afternoon, after having my hair cut, went as far as Honey Beach. Barometer 29.36.
- Monday*
1 November Day of N'yly wind. Morning fine but afternoon mist & later heavy rain which is now continuing. In forenoon carried clay to yard which is now ready for season. In afternoon, boated new gate up to Head of Bay & carried it out to Peaks fence where we cut gateway. Returning home spent remainder of day ditching at Garden Creek.
- Tuesday*
2 November Heavy rain overnight. Morning bright. A most beautiful day. Bright sunshine & little wind. To-day we commenced mustering for season, Albert & I mustering Nth side of Square Hill & Paul holding at Lake. A good "cut". In vicinity of "120" & good % of lambs. Drove home to Cave Rocks. Paul found a lamb (about three days old) in a creek hole, deserted by her mother. We carried her home & have in the meantime instated her in woolshed. Barometer 28.96. {Commenced muster.}
- Wednesday*
3 November Morning threatening. For a "sighter" put Dépôt boat back in her shed (incidentally I may mention in much better condition than when we took her out in April). Though still dull we set out at 9 am. to muster other side of Square Hill. Paul & I mustering, & Albert & Bill holding. Did not have a very good run; sheep stubborn. Mobbed up about "60", which we drove to Cave Rocks. I carried home another lamb to-day. We now have two, "Jack" & "Jill". Home at 4.30 pm; "dog" tired. Scott's pups eyes opened to-day. Saw more young albatrosses in harbour to-night.

- Thursday*
4 November It has been a great day; one of the best ever. In forenoon mustered in Cave Rocks & drove to yards. Set some tussock fires in Cave Rocks; & they have been burning all day. Albert went out to have a look at it to-night. Now dying down; but has made a grand clearance. After dinner, drafted sheep & turned same out in Shipping & Depôt paddocks. Then made all preparation in shed. Later we went over to Beeman to muster it out in readiness for rams. After a deal of trouble mustered two wethers of some seven we knew to be there. Put same in Nth. Col paddock. Home @ 5.30 pm. After tea "shedded up". Paul & I then went floundering; but did no good. Albert shot two sand pipers on Terrace to-night. Now a beautiful evening after brilliant sunshine all day. There has been a peculiar epidemic of deaths amongst our animals to-day. "Jill" was dead this morning as were also two of our cats & before the day was out one of our ducks had "gone West". Surely a disastrous day in that direction. Barometer 28.76.
- Friday*
5 November Heavy rain overnight; but clearing at day break it has been a fine day with cold wind. Commenced shearing at 9 am & continued until 6 pm, when we had majority of sheep shorn. Expect to "cut out" to-morrow. Tally "59". Dot had seven pups to-day. Barometer 28.3. {Dot "7" pups ("1" dead).}
- Saturday*
6 November Shearing to-day: 6 am to 5.30 pm, when we were cut out. Tally "78". After tea shedded up all sheep. Cold S'ly; but fine, with exception of one or two slight showers. "Clyde" has been missing all day and has not showed up yet.
- Sunday*
7 November Rain early this morning; but day fine; afternoon warm sunshine. In forenoon we footrotted sheep & docked lambs. Boated "9" rams to Beeman. In afternoon Albert & I drove out shorn sheep, all going out but two. Later helped Paul kill sheep for dogs. Finishing for day at 4 pm. Barometer 28.72.
- Monday*
8 November A dull day; breeze veering from E'ly to N'ly. One heavy shower at mid-day. In forenoon we mustered Col scrub, driving to Home paddock. In afternoon pressed "3" bales of wool; first of season. Picked pieces. I then finished the boarding of the dip, which we afterwards cleaned out. Chopped wood before tea. In evening "shedded up". Sheep damp. Barometer 28.92.
- Tuesday*
9 November Calm day. Glimpses of sun at times. No rain; but threatening. Commenced shearing @ 6.30 am cut out @ 3 pm. Tally 62. Then docked lambs, drove out shorn sheep. I then killed wether for house, while Paul boated ram to Beeman. Glass falling. By the way another of Dot's pups died yesterday.
- Wednesday*
10 November Morning dull; but later brightening. For a "sighter" we tarred & sanded floor of draining pen & mended gate in yard. Then had morning tea. Mustered home face of Sth. Col & drove to yards. One ram broke away & made for water. I rescued him in dinghy when he was nearly over to

- Beeman. Then shore three rams & boated same to Beeman. In evening skinned a sheep that had died in shed. Afternoon fine; but towards evening cold & showery. Barometer 28.56.
- Thursday*
11 November Snow on tops this morning. Heavy rain during mid-day & part of afternoon. Now cold S'ly with glass rising. Shearing from 8.30 am to 3 pm., when we were "cut out" Tally "54". Then killed sheep for dogs & pressed three bales of wool. Holding shorn sheep in shed to-night. Barometer 28.14. Very Low.
- Friday*
12 November Miserable day. Bitterly cold S'ly with sleet & snow showers (heavy) especially in latter part of day. Snow on tops. In forenoon we docked lambs & drove sheep to Sth. Col. paddock. I then went over to Garden Creek & repaired Cave Rocks gate. In afternoon we mustered out Sth. Col., driving sheep out to run. Brought back, on our way home, pelts of two sheep that had died in paddock since morning. Chopped wood & before finishing for day picked pieces in shed. This morning I found on the track to the woolshed an "Adélé" (?) penguin, evidently out of his latitude, being peculiar to Polar region. Not as big as King penguin. Color blue-black & white. Very long tail. First of kind we have seen here. We are keeping him in shed in meantime. By the way, another gosling died to-day. Barometer 28.58.
- Saturday*
13 November A terrible day. Island practically under snow this morning. Bitterly cold S'ly with heavy snow & hail showers all day. In forenoon I did my washing & in afternoon we rowed to Honey beach. A stiff pull up. Searched for & found two goose nests. One eleven & other three eggs. On our way home we called in at Frenchman's Grave where we bundled up & brought back a load of wood. Home 4 pm.
- Sunday*
14 November To-day Cold S'ly in forenoon: one or two showers. Afternoon sunshine & warm. Quite decent, with a good drying wind. Too wet to-day to muster. In forenoon I chopped some wood & spent afternoon making a pair of clogs for our cook. Boxing before tea. First we have had for some time. Am sorry I have to write of the demise of "Jack" our lamb. In evening we unloaded "Uno" of wood Albert had brought from Frenchman's Grave. We have been looking for the boat to-day; but she gave us no encouragement. Barometer 29.16 & Rising.
- Monday*
15 November Morning threatening but Day fine. Mustered remainder of Sth. Col. Drove to yards. In afternoon drafted sheep: shore wet ewes & docked lambs; which we drove to Sth. Col. paddock. In evening shedded up remainder of sheep. Shearing tally 19. Now a grand evening.
- Tuesday*
16 November Shearing to-day from 6 am to 3 pm when we "cut out". Tally 53. Three of us shearing to-day, so did our "picking up". Then drove all sheep out. Boated three rams to Beeman. Later beached punt, which we found to be leaking. In evening went to Garden Creek in search of "Clyde" who has been missing since yesterday - still missing. Calm day with one or two mist showers. Barometer 28.86.

- Wednesday*
17 November Heavy rain overnight. Day showery. Wind N.W. In forenoon caulked & tarred punt. Pressed two bales (8 to date) & put out drying cloths. In afternoon killed two sheep for house & one for dogs. A quiet day. Still looking for boat. "Clyde" still missing. To-day saw a fight between one of our geese & the penguin! A good "go". Barometer 28.4.
- Thursday*
18 November A cold day after heavy rain last night. Wind N.W. with cold rain showers. An unpleasant day. In forenoon Paul & I cut a goodly supply of wood for the cook. Then, taking our dogs, we made a detour of surrounding paddocks in search of "Clyde", who is still missing. He is not far away, for last night he made a visit to the shed & devoured half of one of our house sheep hanging there! In afternoon went over to Col. & shot another of the bulls, which now leaves one in the herd. Carried home the hide; smaller than last one. Also brought home some tit-bits (ox-tail & steak). {Shot Bull No. II. [i.e. 2]}
- Friday*
19 November Rain overnight. Morning dull with stiff W'ly wind. In forenoon we picked pieces & carted stones to new wall (a "stand-by" job). In afternoon rowed two boats to Bushy Pt. bringing back good loads of firewood. Stiff pull home. In evening made another search for "Clyde". Still missing. A perfect evening. Flat calm. Barometer 29.24 & rising.
- Saturday*
20 November Rain overnight. Morning fine with heavy N'ly (continuing all day). In forenoon ground axes & worked about yards. In afternoon mustered Azimuth valley & part of Nth. Col. A good mob; most successful muster. Drove to Home Paddock. Sheep wet. Now heavy rain from Nth. "Clyde" re-appeared this morning; but disappeared after the muster was finished. Our penguin has also disappeared. Barometer 28.6. Falling.
- Sunday*
21 November A great day. Morning dull; but in afternoon, brilliant sunshine. Very warm. In forenoon I "scrubbed out". Sheep have been drying in Home paddock all day. Albert took some "snaps" about house to-day. "Clyde" still missing. In evening "shedded up". Barometer 29.04.
- Monday*
22 November Shearing to-day from 6 am to 3 pm, when we docked lambs & drove sheep to Nth. Col. paddock. Boated rams to Beeman. Tally "61". About "40" more sheep to shear. In evening roused up sheep in Nth. Col. "Clyde" still missing. No trace of him about paddocks. Calm day; dull; slight showers.
- Tuesday*
23 November Morning dull; but day fine. To-day we mustered remainder of Nth. Col. Drove to Depôt. "98" sheep. In afternoon pressed a bale. No. "9" & in evening drafted & shedded up. Now a beautiful evening. One kitten born to-day!
- Wednesday*
24 November Beautiful day. Bright sunshine. Calm. Evening a severe change; falling glass; N.E. wind & rain threatening. Shearing to-day from 6 am to 5 pm when we docked lambs. Tally "66". In evening drove out sheep & killed two for dogs. Made search for "Clyde" at Beeman.
- Thursday*
25 November Heavy rain overnight. Day dull with N.W. wind. In forenoon killed sheep for house, picked pieces, shored three rams & boated same to

- Beeman: then pressed bale of wool. In afternoon rowed to Beeman for firewood. A good load. Made search for Clyde in evening.
- Friday*
26 November Rain overnight. Morning threatening. In forenoon pressed a bale of wool & carried stones to yards. "Clyde" made his appearance in Depôt paddock; but made off before I could catch him. Afternoon brilliant sunshine. Took a "cut" off Filholl. Some 120 sheep. In evening shedded up. A fine evening. Barometer 29.12.
- Saturday*
27 November Dull day. Morning calm; but afternoon rain set in & is now continuing; very heavy; wind from N'y. Shearing & docking to-day; cut out at 5.30 pm. Tally "64". Then killed three sheep for dogs. Are holding sheep until weather clears. "Clyde" has not made his appearance yet; no opportunity to look for him today. Another gosling dead & also "the" kitten. Barometer 29.
- Sunday*
28 November Morning fine. Beautiful sunshine. Turned sheep into Garden Creek. Boated "3" rams to Beeman. In afternoon I did my washing & chopped wood. Albert & Paul drove sheep out. Later brought in drying sheets. Afternoon showery. Evening cold sleet showers.
- Monday*
29 November Morning dull. Afternoon showers. Wind N.W. In forenoon took a "cut" off Filholl. (67 sheep). Drove home. In afternoon stored bales (13); pressed two; & in evening drafted & shedded up.
- Tuesday*
30 November Cold day; showery; glimpses of sunshine; W'y wind. Shearing in forenoon. Tally 34. In afternoon docked & drove to Cave Rocks. Returning, pressed a bale & killed sheep for dogs. In evening (calm) I repaired a boat "shore" & set one of the ducks. Barometer 29. {Set Duck 11 eggs.}
- Wednesday*
1 December Morning threatening after rain overnight. Later rain set in & continued all day; but for short respites in afternoon; evening fine. In forenoon picked pieces & swept gratings in shed. In afternoon chopped a little wood ("knocked off" when axe handle broke). A quiet day. Albert & Bill went for a sail to Terror Pt. in evening. Saw six "pugs" on beach. "Clyde" still missing. Still looking for boat; now overdue. However we will merely "carry on" in meantime. Barometer 28.5.
- Thursday*
2 December Cold day; glimpses of sunshine; Rain & sleet showers. In forenoon Paul & I erected a break fence in yards. Also put in half an hour on new wall. After an early dinner, mustered back of Filholl; Most satisfactory muster. Drove to Depôt paddock (a mistake). It was to Garden Creek. Home 5.30 pm. Evening fine; drying wind. Barometer 28.36.
- Friday*
3 December Rain overnight. Day cold; with heavy showers though short. Afternoon an improvement. For a "sighter" brought sheep to Depôt paddock. Spent remainder of day (between showers) grubbing lillies [*Bulbinella rossii*] in Shipping paddock & later completed new wall at shed. In evening, drafted & shedded up. One lamb born in paddock.

- Saturday*
4 December Morning fine. Afternoon heavy rain set in from E'ly; so "quitted" shearing @ 2.30 pm. Wind now hauled to N.E. For a "sighter" drafted off wet ewes. I shore same. Tally 38. Holding sheep in shed. Later killed one for house & two for dogs. A broken day. Barometer 28.36.
- Sunday*
5 December Shearing & docking to-day. Cut out @ 4 pm. Commenced @ 9 am. Tally 38. Some 62 lambs in mob; best % yet. In evening drove out shorn sheep, mustering out Cave Rocks on way out. Day showery. Mild. Wind N.W. Barometer 28.82.
- Monday*
6 December Glorious day. Bright sunshine. To-day we mustered M'ntal Head & Saddle Back. Drove to Shipping paddock. A weary drive. Sheep not travelling well. Much trouble with lambs. Clean muster. Home 7.45 pm. After tea drafted & shedded up (in dark) with aid of "language", lantern & patience. Some 380 sheep. Finish for day @ 10.45 pm. Our biggest day so far this season. "Spring" took ill on run to-day & has not returned home yet. Young hawks hatched at Head.
- Tuesday*
7 December Another glorious day. Calm. Great sunshine. One of our best days (few in number). Drafted off dry sheep & shore same until 6 pm. Tally "57". Big sheep; full woolled. In evening pressed bale, shedded up remainder of dry sheep & ground shears. Great sunset this evening. "Spring" not home yet; are afraid he has "gone West". Barometer 28.88.
- Wednesday*
8 December Morning E'ly with heavy rain. Afternoon fine. Evening threatening & later heavy showers. Shearing until mid-day when we "cut out". Tally "30". In afternoon killed three culls for dogs & pressed wool. Now "20" bales. In evening we took a stroll to head of Bay. Three pugs on beach. First I have seen this season. Barometer 28.76.
- Thursday*
9 December N.W. breeze to-day. Morning fine; afternoon heavy showers. To-day we mustered Duma; but did not have best of luck, losing quite a number of sheep, which we hope to get some other day! Were caught in rain; a good "wetting!" Drove to Cave Rocks. Home 3.30 pm. Evening calm. "Kelso" was shot to-night, as a result of his not showing any sign of working ability. "Clyde" made another visit to woolshed last night. The nine young pups are now very interesting. To-day saw "7" pugs at Col beach & "12" at Capstan Bay. & also heard fur seals in Duma rookery. Barometer 29.08.
- Friday*
10 December To-day; foggy; misty; & rain showers. In forenoon turned sheep into Nth. Col. from Home paddock; picked pieces & cleaned out lambs pen. In afternoon two loads of wood from the Peaks. The "Uno" sprang a leak on way home; but we beached her in time; a plank broken. Evening showers. To-day we have given up hope of seeing the boat this year. Barometer 28.88.
- Saturday*
11 December A miserable day; misty & rain showers (heavy at times). A day "off". In forenoon did washing; scrubbed out & chopped wood. In afternoon made repairs to a pair of gum boots. "Clyde" still at large.

- Sunday*
12 December Morning rain showers. After an early lunch we mustered Duma again. Some 43 woollies, which we drove to Cave Rocks. Afternoon fine tho. dull. In evening mustered Nth. Col paddock; yarded, drafted; shedded up. Wind S.W. Barometer 29.6.
- Monday*
13 December Shearing dry ewes from 8 am; turned out wet ewe & lambs in Home paddock: "cut out" @ 3.30 pm. Then killed two sheep for house & two for dogs. Boated six rams to Beeman & in evening drafted & shedded up wet ewes. Tally 36. Barometer 29.32.
- Tuesday*
14 December Morning showery; afternoon fine. Shearing & docking until 4 pm., when we "cut out". Tally "57". Drove sheep to Garden Creek. In evening killed two sheep for dogs & cleaned out duck house in preparation for arrival of ducklings (due in about "10" days. Barometer 29.5.
- Wednesday*
15 December Morning dull; afternoon beautiful sunshine. In forenoon drove out shorn sheep; mustered Cave Rocks on way home. Drove to Shipping paddock. In afternoon drafted sheep; shore four rams & boated same; put out drying cloths. In evening shedded up. Barometer 29.66.
- Thursday*
16 December Dull in forenoon; but a good day; a full day's shearing but for docking lambs. Tally 66. In evening "Laddie" disappeared when off for his run. After searching paddocks I saw him on beach at Honey side. Putting off in dinghy we headed him off at Observatory. After administering a good hiding to him made home @ 10 pm. "Clyde" still at large. Pugs on Honey beach & a small leopard [seal] (with barnacles) at Garden Creek. Barometer 29.53.
- Friday*
17 December Another grand day; third in succession; exceptional weather. Shearing until 2.30 pm, when we "cut out". Tally 48. Then killed two sheep for dogs. In evening drove out shorn sheep via Sth. Col. Exceptionally hot this afternoon.
- Saturday*
18 December Heavy E'ly all day; no rain; but very heavy fog: Pressed "5" bales of wool & stored same. Picked pieces & later in afternoon dug away sod wall from Depôt fence; also ground shears. Wind now died away.
- Sunday*
19 December Rain early; day fine; wind N'ly. A day of rest. In forenoon mended pair of boots for Paul. Albert & I rowed over to Beeman after dinner & caught one of the geese which we killed for Xmas (next week). In evening went for a stroll to Head of Bay. Barometer 28.82.
- Monday*
20 December Good day. One or two showers. To-day mustered Sth. Point. (126 sheep). Satisfactory muster. Drove to Depôt. In evening shedded up. Shore "6" sheep on run. Great numbers of albatrosses on Point. Home 6.30 pm. Barometer 29.
- Tuesday*
21 December Another great day. In evening E'ly set in with light rain. The weather of late has been exceptionally good. Shearing to-day; cut out @ 2.15 pm. Tally "60". Good shearing sheep. Turned sheep into Sth. Col. paddock; holding them in meantime. Then killed two sheep for dogs & Xmas lamb for house. I am going to "do up" the skin. Syphoned out dip in

- preparation for dipping. As we cannot now depend on the boat coming; we are going to carry on dipping off the blades [dipping newly shorn sheep]. Boated two rams to Beeman. A useful day. Barometer 28.9.
- Wednesday*
22 December Light rain & fog practically all day. In forenoon pressed wool & stored same. Also stored pelts. Then scrubbed down "board". Afternoon "off". Stretched & washed lambs skin. Barometer 28.68.
- Thursday*
23 December Morning dull after rain last night. In forenoon grubbed lilies in Depôt paddock; cut a track from yards to gate. Afternoon fine; bright sunshine. Mustered West face of Honey from scrub at Sq. Hill. Fair muster; & a deal of work. However mobbed up some 120; home 7.30 pm, after drafting & shedding up. Fine views of Island to-day from my beat. Found some gulls nests on beach at Observatory.
- Friday*
24 December Xmas Eve. A wet day; fine for part of afternoon. Wind N.W. Shearing until 2 pm when we cut out. Tally 49. Turned sheep into Sth. Col. paddock. Killed two sheep for dogs & one for house; a fine sheep. In evening, prepared a goose & duck for to-morrow. Barometer 28.7.
- Saturday*
25 December Xmas Day. Morning dull & cold; but later a fine day; calm; mild & warmer. In forenoon Paul & I mustered in sheep from Sth. Col; dipped same. In afternoon sailed to Terror Pt. bringing back a good load of firewood. Pugs at Terror Pt. Home 4.30 pm. Then docked lambs. Sheep in Home Paddock. In evening shore six rams & boated same to Beeman. A good day's work. I was just having a look at my diary of same date last year. Poultry for dinner to-day.
- Sunday*
26 December Morning steady rain; cleared @ about 11 am, when it has been fine for remainder. Sunshine with S'ly wind. In forenoon pressed a bale of wool; I then did my washing. In afternoon barbered Paul's hair. A quiet day. Went for a stroll to Head of Bay in evening.
- Monday*
27 December Morning threatening. After breakfast rain set in so muster a "wash out". "Turned in" for forenoon. Afternoon fine; chopped wood for half an hour. In evening went for a stroll to Garden Creek. A small sea lion well up in paddock. We went back later to kill him for dog tucker; but he had disappeared. Now S'ly. Barometer 28.8.
- Tuesday*
28 December A grand day with S'ly breeze. To-day we mustered Honey from Terror Pt., Paul & I rowing down in Dinghy. Pugs on beach. A good muster. Home @ 2 pm. Over 200 sheep. In afternoon Paul & I rowed to Observatory bringing back a "scrag" that had not mustered in. Dressed it for dogs. Later dipped lambs. 66 & put out wool to dry. In evening drafted & shedded up.
- Wednesday*
29 December Morning dull; later heavy rain from E'ly; continuing until mid-afternoon when wind hauled to N.W.! Rain showers. Shearing from 6 am. Cut out wet ewes then docked lambs & turned out same. Continued on with dry sheep until 6 pm. Tally 86. In evening killed on sheep for house. {3 Ducks Hatched.}

Thursday
30 December A terrible day; steady rain from N'ly all day & continuing. Started shearing @ 8 am. Cut out remainder of mob & are holding same in shed. Killed one sheep for dogs. In afternoon pressed & stored wool & picked pieces. Barometer 28.5.

Friday
31 December New Year's Eve. Morning dull but later a fine day with mist on tops. Wind N'ly. In forenoon turned out ewes & lambs from Garden Creek to Cave Rocks. Then dipped sheep from shed. Boated 7 rams to Beeman & killed two sheep for dogs. In afternoon put dipped sheep into Cave Rocks. Then went out to Sth. side of Honey & had a "clean up" muster. Some 45 sheep. Drove to Depôt. Home 5.30 pm. In evening shedded up.



Mt Beeman and the Lyall Peaks - from beach below house. Sketch by W.R. Fleck.

1921

- Saturday*
1 January New Years Day. Rain overnight. Day showery; strong N.W. wind. Drafted sheep; dipped lambs. Paul & Albert then mustered out Sth. Col. to Cave Rocks while I spread wet wool & did one or two odd jobs about shed. Started shearing 1 pm. Cut out; dipped, docked, boated one ram to Beeman & pressed one bale (35). Tally 21. In evening Albert drove out sheep.
- Sunday*
2 January A positively rotten day. A flood rain all day. Now heavy mist from N'ly. Another duckling dead this morning; but two left now. In forenoon Albert & I swept out pens & sorted pelts. In afternoon I mended pair of boots for Paul.
- Monday*
3 January Strong S.W. wind with slight showers. Glimpses of sun & at times cold. To-day we mustered back of Honey & Harbour Face, leaving home @ 9 am, as early morning was very doubtful. A good muster; in vicinity of 500. Hard work for only three of us; a number of "doubles" in mob. Drove to Garden Creek. Home 8.10 pm.! A severe day. In our absence the pups killed & ate one of our fowls!
- Tuesday*
4 January A showery day. Glimpses of sunshine. W'ly wind. A day with yesterday's mob. Brought sheep in from paddock. Drafted off lambs; dipped same. Drafted off dry sheep to Home paddock. Wet ewes Shipping paddock. Shore "5" rams; boated same to Beeman. Killed sheep & lamb for house. Evening shedded up. Mob 400 odd. Barometer 29.4.
- Wednesday*
5 January Dull day. Wind N.W.; mist on tops. Drafted wet ewes from dry. Lambs & wet ewes to Depôt. Shorn dry sheep until 3.45 pm. Tally 60. Killed "3" sheep for dogs. In evening brought in wet ewes; drafted same: shedded up. Shorn sheep into Garden Creek.
- Thursday*
6 January Shearing wet ewes until 2 pm, when we "cut out". Tally 53. I then brought in shorn sheep from Garden Creek. Dipped them with wet ewes. Then docked lambs (116); a very even lot in size. In evening shedded up remainder of woollies from Home paddock. Morning misty; afternoon fine. S'ly breeze. Barometer 29.44.
- Friday*
7 January Shearing until 3.30 pm. when we cut out remainder of mob. Tally 57: We have shorn 407 from this mob. Then dipped sheep. Killed two for dogs; boated one ram to Beeman. Shorn sheep to Garden Creek. A good day's work. Sheep shorn to date 2733. To-day I broke my shears; most unfortunate. Am setting new pair. S'ly wind & fine. Barometer 29.8.
- Saturday*
8 January A very warm day: quite oppressive. All suffering from a languid feeling. In forenoon mustered out Cave Rocks of all shorn sheep. Caught "10" woollies at gate & shore same. Home 2.30 pm. In afternoon put out wet wool & pressed "5" bales. "Forty" to date. In evening Albert & I put in half bale of 1st pieces & ground my new shears. Barometer 29.84.

- Sunday*
9 January Morning very heavy fog. Muster impossible. In forenoon pressed two bales; picked over locks & put out wet wool. Afternoon fine sunshine. Evening again heavy fog. Did my washing & scrubbed out. We again moored punt. (the boat may come this month). In evening went for a stroll to Head of Bay. Barometer 29.87.
- Monday*
10 January Intense fog all day. Wind N.W. Evening fairly calm. In forenoon we made repairs to break fence at Bight of Beeman bringing back a good load of firewood with us. In afternoon rowed to Terror Pt., bringing back dinghy. Killed one of the numerous pugs for dogs. A stiff pull home; a big sea. Paul found an old notice board above the beach, relating to some seeds planted there in "1899" by crew of the "*Southern Cross*" (an Antarctic expedition of that date). Rather an interesting relic. As we could see no sign of the plants, we brought home the sign board. We shall preserve it at home here. In evening I went over to S. Col & shore two sheep on the run. Barometer 29.48.
- Tuesday*
11 January Yet another day of dense fog; but evening clearing somewhat. Wind N.W. In forenoon picked over stained pieces & made an unsuccessful search for woollies over at Beeman. In afternoon went over to S. Col where we shored "13" woollies. Home @ 6 pm. In evening ground shears. Barometer 29.28.
- Wednesday*
12 January Morning threatening: few "skifs" of rain but day brightening with a hot N'ly. A very oppressive day. Very tiring on the hill. To-day we took a cut off the Peaks from the "Rocky" gulley. Some 178 sheep. A good muster. Drove to yards. After dinner (home 3.15 pm) drafted & shedded up. This is our fifth consecutive day without any rain to speak of, so you may guess we are expecting something. Barometer 29.22.
- Thursday*
13 January Strong E'ly wind & fog all day; but hauling to N'ly in evening. Shearing until 4.15 pm, when we "cut out" mob. Tally "72" Shorn sheep to Home Paddock. Killed two sheep for dogs.
- Friday*
14 January After a threatening morning the day turned out to be one of the best ever. Brilliant sunshine, & calm; a real Dominion day [day to celebrate]. Brought in sheep from paddock, drafted, footrotted & dipped same. After an early lunch we again mustered Nth. Col. scrub. Some 12 woollies. Drove to yards. Shore & dipped & footrotted same. Col. sheep to run, two rams to Beeman, Peaks sheep to Nth. Col paddock. Killed one sheep for house (a good day's work). Barometer 29.4.
- Saturday*
15 January Mist in morning, so muster not possible. However, later in day it cleared, a warm calm day. We put in day at back of Col with bag & shears ("10" woollies). Lost one sheep & lamb in water. Home 4 pm. We are getting short of water! Phenomenal circumstances in this latitude. Sandflies very aggressive to-day.

- Sunday*
16 January A fine morning; calm. Rowed to Nellies Rest in dinghy to muster far end of Peaks. Sheep, including a number of “doubles”, were travelling well when heavy fog & rain set in from N’y. Abandoned muster; rowed home against stiff breeze. Afternoon gloriously fine. The irony of it! In afternoon pressed four bales of wool. Went as far as Garden Creek in evening. Now a drying S’y wind. A coincidence; we had the same experience with that particular muster last year. One pug on beach at the Rest. No sign of the boat yet. Our stores are running low. We have had to revert to the Depôt for tea stores. Barometer 28.8.
- Monday*
17 January Rain overnight & in early forenoon; remainder of day beautifully fine, sunshine & calm. One or two odd jobs about shed & a boxing lesson occupied forenoon. In afternoon rowed to Bushy Pt., & had a straggler muster along Peaks from Rocky Gulley. Some “30” woollies. Drove to Home paddock. In evening sailed to Bushy Pt., bringing back dinghy & load of wood. Home 8 pm. Later shedded up.
- Tuesday*
18 January Morning doubtful; showery. Turned out sheep to Depôt; Paul & I then rowed to Bight of Beeman, & climbing over Peaks, to muster out back from N.E. Harbour. Rain set in when we arrived on beat; nothing daunted we just carried on. Very heavy showers & cold. A good muster under circumstances. Some “200” Drove to Beeman, sheep travelling well. Everybody miserably wet. Home 4 pm. After a bath & a good tea we forgot our troubles of the day. Now S’y with rain showers. After tea killed sheep for dogs. To-day, my worst experience on run yet.
- Wednesday*
19 January Morning cold S’y with sun. Picked pieces & put out drying cloths. then went over to Nth. Col where we mustered “15” woollies, 12 of which we drove to Beeman. In afternoon we mustered Beeman bringing in rams with yesterday’s mob. In evening shedded up, rams to Home Paddock.
- Thursday*
20 January A good day after a dull morning; sunshine; S’y wind, evening rain threatening. For a “sighter” Paul & I mustered in some “19” woollies from Beeman, sheep missed yesterday. Dipped rams, & shore some “28” sheep. In afternoon drafted woollies, dipped lambs. Drove rams to Beeman. Killed two sheep for house; two for dogs; shedded up woollies; a full day.
- Friday*
21 January Morning dull; shearing from 6 am to breakfast. Tally 14. Weather then cleared so decided on muster of Peaks. Rowed to Nellies Rest. & mustered from Finger Post. One sea lion at beach. A good muster. Drove to Home Paddock. Home 5.45 pm. Another sea lion at head of Home Bay. Killed him for dogs. In evening shedded up woollies that had been turned into Depôt. A good day with S.E. wind.
- Saturday*
22 January Commenced shearing @ 8.20 after drafting of wet ewes. Shore & dipped same: docked lambs; into Depôt. Drafted y’days [sic] muster. Remained

- [Remainder] of day shearing & dipping. Tally 45. A very broken day. Evening turned out sheep from N.Col. paddock. Shore "4" woollies; & "cut in" sea lion. Finish at 9.30 pm.
- Sunday*
23 January Commenced shearing 6 am., day of shearing, docking, dipping etc. Killed one "scrag". Tally "47". Have now all sheep "cut out" with exception of a few doubles & rams. A full day. Day dull; evening heavy rain set in.
- Monday*
24 January &
Tuesday
25 January Wakened to find the S.S. "Tutanekai" at anchor in harbour in a dense fog. Party came ashore including ladies; a merry party. Spent day baling wool, loading, taking off stores, & killing sheep for boat. Spent evening on board. In morning loaded punt of coal & squared up shed. Ran sheep into shed & picked out more wethers for boat. Boat left @ 1.15 pm. Albert going up; I have been left in charge; we have also two new men. Am staying on until March. In afternoon docked lambs of mob in hand, beached & unloaded punt. In evening turned out mob & shedded up a few woollies in hand. {Boat arrived.}
- Wednesday*
26 January Morning dull; rain threatening; later very heavy rain with N'ly gale; simply smoking. Evening wind dropped; rain eased. In forenoon mustered in Garden Creek, drafted off woollies, shedded up. Prepared shears; shore 37 sheep. I am now not shearing; with three men on board it is necessary for me to pick up etc. Held sheep in shed; too wet to turn out; had put shorn sheep in Home Paddock. In afternoon arranged stores; picked over all potatoes & secured punt. Have received all my parcels.
- Thursday*
27 January Morning dull & showery; afternoon brilliantly fine. Wind N.W. Glass rising. In forenoon branded rams, docked sheep & lambs & dipped all sheep. Carried up & arranged all stores. Cleaned up shed. In afternoon boated 12 rams to Beeman: turned out sheep to Sth. Col. Laid out potatoes. Made repairs to yards & race gate. Killed wether for house. Syphoned, cleaned & filled dip. A good day's work. Barometer 29.3.
- Friday*
28 January Rain early with fog in forenoon - afternoon fine Wind N.W. Picked over all piece wool & baled same; made trough for pigs. Scrubbed down board. Afternoon made repairs to break fence at Beeman & re-staked back fence; some "60" stakes.
- Saturday*
29 January N.W. wind. A good day: mustered back of Peaks; 35 woollies; drove to Shipping yard. New chaps shaping well. Later drafted mob; dipped lambs & shorn sheep. Shedded up. Mutton birds [sooty shearwaters] in harbour to-day. Barometer 29.6.
- Sunday*
30 January An unsatisfactory day; rain & fog with glimpses of sun: shore 36 sheep, footrotted same & turned out to Home Paddock. In afternoon did washing; an accumulated consignment.

- Monday*
31 January Heavy fog all day. light rain showers In forenoon rowed to Bushy Pt., bringing back load of firewood; had intended to get dinghy from Nellie's Rest; but there was too much wind. Home 11 am. Then brought in sheep from Home paddock. Drafted & dipped same. In afternoon turned out wethers & branded ewes to Cave Rocks & all other sheep from Sth Col to run. Odd jobs occupied remainder of day. Barometer 29.9.
- Tuesday*
1 February Calm day with heavy mist; muster impossible. Forenoon "bag & shears" at Capstan Bay; 15 woollies; a good haul. In afternoon prepared fence line for new pig run & put in posts for same. Fog still continuing. Barometer 29.84.
- Wednesday*
2 February Severe fog all day; with rain showers towards evening. This eternal fog is keeping back our work; but we have no choice in that matter. Spent day on new pig run. Cut & boated stakes; lined up fence; ran out wires & made a commencement on shelter. Barometer 29.88.
- Thursday*
3 February Heavy fog all day; clearing in evening. Brought in scrag from N.Col & killed same for dogs. Remainder of day on pig run; fence now completed. A black hen made her appearance to-day with six chicks. Barometer 29.98.
- Friday*
4 February Again heavy fog all day; wind veering from N.W. to E'ly! Rain latter part of afternoon. Bill has been unwell to-day; I have assumed his duties as cook. The "chaps" rowed to Head of Bay for material for pig run & spent day on same; rain stopped work @ 3.30 pm. In afternoon I ran out our sheep from Garden Creek to Cave Rocks. Saw wild duck & young ones at Creek. Barometer 30.06. High.
- Saturday*
5 February Heavy fog early; no muster; bright sunshine for a few hrs. at mid-day; more fog in afternoon & later fine rain. Rowed to Nellies rest; killed dog meat (scrag) brought back dinghy & two loads of firewood from Bushy Pt. Brought in sheep from N.Col.; killed one wether for house. Drove remainder to Cave Rocks. Completed & tarred pig-stye. Barometer 29.8.
- Sunday*
6 February Morning misty: mid-forenoon it cleared. Remainder of day beautifully fine. In forenoon installed pigs in new run; painted roof of stye; put out drying cloths, & wet wool. Afternoon Bill & I took his camera out to Nth. Col. Evening fine. Mutton birds in harbour today. Barometer 29.66.
- Monday*
7 February Heavy mist & rain all forenoon. Perhaps the weather will give us a chance sometime. In forenoon pressed bale of wool. Baled piece wool, picked over potatoes. Boxing lesson & chopping of wood occupied afternoon. Also barbered Bill's hair. Afternoon fine. Evening N.W. wind. Barometer 29.04.
- Tuesday*
8 February A good day. Revaille @ 5 am. Mustered N.E. Harbour side of Fizeau. A good muster. 30 odd sheep. Drove to yards, drafted & shedded up. Rain showers in evening. Barometer 29.06.
- Wednesday*
9 February Morning cold & stormy after heavy rain overnight. Drafted ewes from wethers. Shore 96 sheep, footrotted same; branded eight rams; killed

- two sheep for dogs & one lamb for house. Cold day; S'ly showers. One chick dead to-day. Barometer 29.16.
- Thursday*
10 February Revaille 5 am; turned out sheep to Home & Depôt paddock. We had intended to muster but weather became threatening so abandoned same. Later brought in all sheep & lambs & dipped same; shored two woollies. Pressed bale of wool. Afternoon boated 8 rams to Beeman; rain set in; turned ewes & lambs to Home paddock; wethers & breeding ewes to Cave Rocks. Heavy rain all afternoon; disappointing after dipping sheep. Rain still cont. Barometer 29.
- Friday*
11 February Essayed muster of Fizeau (back face) but had to abandon same on a/c of bad weather. Home @ noon. Remainder of day showery; very stormy. Afternoon I mended a pair of gum boots (1/2 soles). Later brought in sheep from Home paddock; docked lambs; turned out all sheep to N.Col. Barometer 29.5.
- Saturday*
12 February Morning very threatening with N.W. gale. No muster. Brightened later. Spent day on N & S Col with bag & shears. Total bag "11". Home 2.30 pm. Afternoon very dull. Evening heavy mist. Very cold on hill to-day. Saw first young albatross of year to-day. Mutton birds in harbour to-day. Barometer 29.4 {First Albatross of year.}
- Sunday*
13 February Heavy fog & rain all forenoon; afternoon fine for an hour; then more rain. Evening calm; fine. Observed Sabbath. In forenoon did washing & scrubbed out. Afternoon Jack & I went out to Cave Rocks. Had a look at the ruby mine; got wet on way home. Duckling died to-day; & two chicks yesterday. Barometer 29.32.
- Monday*
14 February Morning fine. Again essayed a muster of back of Fizeau. Arrived on our beat; had a great muster in front of us; but had to abandon same when nearly "mobbed up" on a/c of dense fog (still continuing on Nth. end.) It is most disheartening; that was our second attempt at that muster. However "the birds may sing again". Home 2 pm. Later brought in sheep from Nth. Col, & killed two for dogs. Paul saw whale to-day. Barometer 29.2.
- Tuesday*
15 February A wet miserable day; cold heavy rain at times & heavy fog. Nothing doing. To-day saw demise of a hen & a chick. Barometer 29.1.
- Wednesday*
16 February A fine day; but for one or two showers. Again mustered back of Fizeau; but found sheep had not gone back on pasture after our last attempt at that muster. Only "20" sheep when we mobbed up. However Mac & I took a cut off back of Azimuth, Jack & Paul going on with mob. We got together over "50"; drove to Shipping paddock; after tea turned sheep into Depôt; too wet to shed up. Pups that were not tied up accounted for some of our poultry in our absence. Barometer 29.5.
- Thursday* 17
February Heavy rain overnight continuing in forenoon; afternoon showery; N. end under mist. In forenoon killed wether for house & picked over our

- potatoes, which are failing every day. In afternoon cut & boated firewood from Frenchman's grave. Barometer 29.54.
- Friday*
18 February Revaille 5 am. Set out to muster Fey; a grand day; best since boat left. A good muster; but damned hard work for three men. In fact too much. However mobbed up; good drive home; arrived @ 6.30 pm. Sheep in Home paddock. Night wild. Both Paul & Bill saw whales to-day. Barometer 29.38. {Whales (2) @ Fey.}
- Saturday*
19 February A boisterous day with cold S'ly rain showers; after a wild night when heavy rain fell. Door was blown from hen-house this morning. In afternoon brought in sheep (very wet) from paddocks, killed two for dogs; turned out sheep to Depôt. Barometer 29.22.
- Sunday*
20 February A terrible day; cold N.W. wind, heavy rain all day. It will be four weeks since the boat left & since that day we have have had but four fine days. Consequently we are not getting on with our job. "Cela va sans dire". [That goes without saying.] Observed Sabbath to-day. Barometer 28.5.
- Monday*
21 February Cold morning after heavy rain last night; forenoon dull; S'ly wind. Turned out shorn sheep from N. Col; brought in woollies; too wet to handle same. Afternoon heavy rain; could do nothing with sheep. Turned out same to N.Col. paddock. Killed one scrag for dogs. In forenoon had cut & carried stakes from N.Col & made repairs to Home paddock fence. A cold miserable day. Barometer 28.48.
- Tuesday*
22 February A cold Winter's day. Showery all day; sleet & a little snow. Strong S.W. wind. No day out of doors. Jack & I spent day at shed making new bread trough for our cook. Barometer 28.96.
- Wednesday*
23 February Paul described this as "another day for the King" [a day off work]. Showery overnight; day bitterly cold. S'ly wind; rain practically all day. Snow on tops this morning. I spent day tidying up the store & doing one or two odd jobs about house. Barometer 28.56.
- Thursday*
24 February Morning fine tho. dull. Mustered in Nth. Col paddock at low water. Sheep wet underneath. Drove to Shipping paddock. However rain set in so had to turn them out again. Bad luck. Spend remainder of forenoon in odd jobs & grinding of shears. Afternoon heavy rain (very heavy) & fog. Evening brightening with strong W'ly wind. Barometer 28.5.
- Friday*
25 February Heavy gale S.W. overnight; bitterly cold wind; showery; brought in sheep from Depôt; killed two for house & two for dogs. No chance drying sheep; same to N.Col. paddock. Have had this mob in hand a week now. Afternoon cleaned out water tables about house (between showers). Sleet & rain showers continuing. Barometer 29.30.
- Saturday*
26 February Fine morning; mustered in N.Col. to Home Paddock; left Jack at home to tend sheep & do some painting about house. We went down harbour & brought back two good loads of firewood. Rain set in as we arrived home so shedded up; which job took us some hour or so, sheep fairly dry. Then she came away a strong E'ly with heavy rain; something

- damnable. Afternoon turned out lambs to yards; severe weather for them but that is all we could do; unloaded wood in heavy rain. Evening hauled to N'ly with rain continuing. Barometer 29.14.
- Sunday*
27 February Heavy rain all night. Day fine with heavy wind from N.W. Drafted off ewes from wethers. Commenced shearing 9 am. Shore until noon; then dipped lambs. Cont'd shearing until 6 pm. Shore 159. Shorn sheep & lambs Home paddock. Then shedded up remainder of woollies from Depôt. A full day. Barometer 29.
- Monday*
28 February Strong N.W. wind sunshine between showers. Shearing 6 am till noon. Brought in sheep from Home paddock; drafted off lambs. Had intended to dip; but a shower made sheep too wet to handle so turned out. Cont'd shearing until 6 pm. "181" shorn - some "15" more to do. Evening turned out remainder of shorn sheep to Depôt. The pups to-day commenced to chase sheep (when not wanted to); so are destined to the chain. Barometer 29.24.
- Tuesday*
1 March Fine day; N.W. wind. A full day; shearing; footrotting; dipping; drafting; pressing wool; branding rams; driving out rams; docking lambs & turning out shorn sheep. Barometer 29.48.
- Wednesday*
2 March Heavy rain overnight. Too wet to muster. Pressed six bales of wool. Picked pieces; stored bales & piece wool. Put out drying cloths. Scrubbed shearing board, & did odd jobs about yards & shed. Full day. Fine day; W'ly wind. Barometer 28.86. {"Pig."}
- Thursday*
3 March Very heavy rain overnight. Day showery; hail; & cold; sunshine at times. Spent forenoon in repairs to yards & odd jobs about shed. Afternoon I went out to Peaks fence & painted standards; a preventative for rusting wire. Barometer 29.02.
- Friday*
4 March &
Saturday
5 March A fine day; beautiful sunshine. Forenoon made all preparation to muster Paris. After dinner set out for N.W. Bay with provisions, our cook following later. Lions at Middle bay. We counted no less than "20" on beach at N.W.; most I have seen at any one time. Had a good view of cattle en route. We made out at least two new calves since we were over that way last. However, after a cup of tea; set out to muster the Judge & his Chair & Paris Hole; got it pretty clean & drove past Penguin Creek. Returned to Hut @ 7 pm; Bill having arrived by that time. Beautiful night. Passed a fairly comfortable night. Very heavy rain & in morning drizzle & dense fog. Could do nothing that day; no advantage to stay over there so set out for home. Arrived mid-day. All day dense fog & at times light rain. Altogether bad luck. Barometer 29.3. {"20" Lions at N.W.B.}
- Sunday*
6 March Heavy rain set in @ 8 pm last night & has continued unabatingly all day to-day. Altogether a terrible day. Did not venture out; observed Sabbath; boxing lesson after tea. Barometer 28.7.
- Monday*
7 March Rain ceased last night after a 24 hour stunt! To-day cold, dull & threatening. In forenoon brought in sheep from Garden Creek; after a

deal of trouble; also brought firewood from the Grave. Afternoon I killed one sheep for house & two for dogs; whilst the "rest" brought in more wood from the grave. Sleet showers in afternoon; a Winter's day. Barometer 29.2.

Tuesday Another miserable day; very cold, with sleet & rain showers. A quiet
8 March day. Did one or two odd jobs about homestead. Boxing in evening. Barometer 29.3.

Wednesday Rain overnight. Morning wet; mist; afternoon brighter; "a day for the
9 March King" [day off]. Nothing much doing to-day. Severe hail shower in evening. To-day two of the pups disappeared; I set out in search of them & came across them in Cave Rocks "2" miles from home & they were interested in some sheep out there; I chased them home; they are now feeling very sick we should imagine. Barometer 29.14.

Thursday Rain overnight; morning showery; brought in sheep from the Creek;
10 March killed one for dogs; odd jobs about shed remainder of forenoon; afternoon wet; that is about all we can say. Barometer 29.1.

Friday A Wet day (anyone who has lived here will understand what that is);
11 March with bitter wind veering from W. to S.W. Barometer 28.72, morning 28.4.

Saturday Heavy rain & hail overnight; muster impossible; morning showery; in
12 March fact all day so; sunshine part of afternoon; cold: forenoon brought in sheep & killed wether for house. Afternoon I commenced tarring back wall of shed & also put out some wet fleeces. We are hoping for a fine day to-morrow. Barometer 29.28.

Sunday Morning heavy fog & rain. Observed Sabbath. Cleared about mid-
13 March afternoon; sunshine for a couple of hours; strong N.W. wind.

Monday 14 March Yesterday a grand day; warm sunshine: In forenoon killed sheep for
& Tuesday dogs & in afternoon made for Paris; same programme overnight. Eight
15 March sea lions on beach. Camped at N.W. Bay. Next morning dull; carried on with muster. Few penguins at rookeries at the Head. Muster only fair. Sheep did not run well. We can account for some "50" missed. Poor % of lambs. Drove to Garden Creek. Now dense fog. Barometer 29.28.

Wednesday Heavy fog. Brought in sheep from Garden Creek. Drafted lambs, ewes &
16 March wethers; dipped lambs. Commenced shearing after dinner; light failed at 4.30 pm when heavy rain set in turned out shorn sheep & lambs to N.Col.: pressed wool & killed for house & dogs. Wind N'yly. Barometer 29.

Thursday St. Pat's Day. Heavy driving rain from S.E. for 24 hours. Everything
17 March soaking absolutely. Commenced shearing after breakfast. No light to commence sooner. Shore until 2.30 pm, when we had to stop on a/c of wet sheep. (driving rain finding its way into shed.) Sheep were dry when put into shed!!!! Remainder of ewes to N.Col.; holding wether in shed. Later pressed wool. Rain now eased. Barometer 28.8.

- Friday*
18 March Shearing from 8.30 am to 5 pm, when shed was cut out, dipped rams; same to Home Paddock & wethers to Depôt. Some 880 sheep since boat left. Evening killed sheep for dogs. Grand day; sunshine. Barometer 28.98.
- Saturday*
19 March Heavy rain from 7 pm overnight until mid forenoon; then a grand day; sunshine; calm. Forenoon pressed wool; afternoon branded & boated rams; Jack & I going on down harbour; brought back a good load of firewood; Paul & Mac going over to N.W. Bay for blankets left there from Paris muster. Evening Jack & I went over to Garden Creek. Full day. Barometer 28.74.
- Sunday*
20 March A cold wet miserable day; S.E. wind; rain. Observed Sabbath. In afternoon did washing. Evening very cold. Barometer 29.18.
- Monday*
21 March Morning dull after rain showers (heavy overnight). Brought in wethers from Garden Creek; footrotted same; took off some "15" fats for boat. Killed wether for house; & scrag for dogs. Moored punt off wharf in readiness for boat which we sincerely hope to see in course of a couple of weeks. Afternoon dipped wethers. Brought in ewes & lambs from N.Col.; footrotted sheep; dipped same; docked lambs. Evening; ewes & lambs to run via S.Col; wethers to Cave Rocks; "fats" to N.Col: now heavy rain from N. Finish for day @ 7.30 pm. Barometer 28.62.
- Tuesday*
22 March Rain overnight continuing until 9 am. Day cold; showers forenoon. Some odd jobs about shed in forenoon. A pug seal made his appearance off wharf to-day. Evening fine. Moon full. Barometer 28.46.
- Wednesday*
23 March Heavy rain overnight; day showery afternoon finer; but threatening. Glass very low. Forenoon brought in sheep & killed two for dogs; picked over piece wool; afternoon had intended to go down harbour for wood; but thought better of it. However I finished tarring back wall of shed. Hail shower evening. Barometer 28.02. Very low.
- Thursday*
24 March Rain overnight; snow on all tops; day bitterly cold with rain sleet & hail. Mid-winter fairly. Did not venture out. Barometer 28.72.
- Friday*
25 March Good Friday. Snow on tops; bitterly cold day with wind from S.W. (& much rain!!!!) Not a "good Friday" as far as weather is concerned. Having no option we observed day as a holiday. Barometer 29.04.
- Saturday*
26 March Morning heavy mist; calm; no muster; later E'ly set in followed at high water by heavy rain still continuing; practically a gale outside. A most miserable day. Barometer 28.52.
- Sunday*
27 March The same old tale. Rain overnight; everything reeking of wetness; under those cirrs. [circumstances] we observed our Easter Sunday. Morning a dead calm with mist; I did washing & baled out punt. Afternoon went with my dog to Honey beach in dinghy. Home just before the inevitable rain set in. On looking through diary I find we have had to date since boat left but "14" days of fair weather. Surely a dismal record. Barometer 28.74.

- Monday*
28 March Same dismal tale. Heavy rain overnight with mist & drizzle in forenoon; afternoon perhaps a little finer. I went over to S.Col paddock in afternoon & killed a scrag ewe which I carried home for dog feed. Evening calm with heavy mist. Barometer 29.52.
- Tuesday*
29 March Revaille early to-day. Had hopes of muster; but after breakfast down she came; heavy fog & drizzle continuing practically all day. Evening finer; cold W'ly. It is now eight days since we have been able to do anything. Barometer 29.4.
- Wednesday*
30 March A wild night last night; morning threatening. No muster. Blowing half a gale from W'ly all day; cold wind & sunshine. Forenoon I killed two sheep for house while the "rest" carried firewood from N.Col paddock; no chance of getting down harbour. Afternoon I inspected Beeman fence & mustered up rams (looking O.K.) Barbered Bill's hair (a "boat" trim he called it). We are now anxiously looking for that boat. Barometer 29.7.
- Thursday*
31 March All day heavy fog to water; strong wind from N.W. Muster impossible. Forenoon brought in a cut from Cave Rocks; picked out & killed three for dogs. Afternoon the chaps went to Beeman for firewood; I spent afternoon on Beeman fence where I ran out two new wires. A sea lion made his appearance at Head of Bay to-day; but did not come ashore. Still looking for that boat. Barometer 29.6.
- Friday*
1 April Rain overnight; mist in morning. No muster. In forenoon brought two loads of firewood from Beeman. Afternoon unloaded boat. Then a gale from Nth. with fog & rain. A wild night.
- Saturday*
2 April Rough night; cold strong N.W. wind; showers in forenoon. To-day we cut some "80" stakes in N.Col paddock & syphoned out; cleaned & re-filled dip. A cold raw day. Barometer 29.67.
- Sunday*
3 April No muster; observed Sabbath. Morning threatening. Day cold. In afternoon Jack, Bill & I went to Capstan Bay where Jack had a "prospect" for gold in the creek there; did not raise a colour [specks of gold]. Took some snaps. Home 6 pm. Paul saw three sparrow hawks to-day. Barometer 30.3. Very high.
- Monday*
4 April An early call this morning; but fog coming down; muster was abandoned. Spent day down harbour getting firewood (forenoon). Now have a goodly supply of wood. Afternoon unloaded wood & boated more from Depôt. Dull day with fog. Barometer 30.2.
- Tuesday*
5 April Miserable day. N.Wind & drizzle. To-day I took in hand one of the pups (Tweed) & am going to try & break him in. Evening a sea lion made his appearance off boat noost [mooring]. Barometer 29.62.
- Wednesday*
6 April Heavy rain all night cont. in forenoon with drizzle. Afternoon fine; evening more fog & rain. To-day we killed one of our pigs!! Barometer 28.86.

- Thursday*
7 April Again rain overnight. Morning foggy. Light showers during day. To-day we carried stakes from N.Col. & commenced re-staking Home Paddock. Barometer 29.
- Friday*
8 April Yet another miserable day; rain, mist & fog. In forenoon I brought in sheep which Paul & Mac killed for dogs. Barometer 28.88.
- Saturday*
9 April To say the least of it "a rotten day"; dense fog; rain; mist; in fact all things disagreeable. Wind hauling from N.E. to E. with a low glass. Nothing much doing to-day. No day for outside work; & that is all we have to "carry on with". It is a long time since we had a fine day. We have now finished our shearing; too late in the year now to contemplate an[y] further activity in that direction. Barometer 28.04.
- Sunday*
10 April Terrible day! (& that is going some). Rain all day & heavy with bitterly cold wind veering from S.W to S'y. Barometer 27.96, this morning 27.70.
- Monday*
11 April Rain! Rain!! Rain!!! Rain overnight. Showery during day & cold. I spent forenoon at shed. Afternoon I brought in sheep from N.Col. paddock & in evening killed one for house. One of the sheep made to sea; but after a deal of trouble I rescued him. Barometer 28.18.
- Tuesday*
12 April A damnable day. "Is [It] is ever thus". Rain & hail showers overnight cont. throughout day, with thunder in forenoon. That is the third occasion on which I have heard thunder here. Glimpses of sun in afternoon; more rain evening. Indoors all day. Barometer 28.04. {Thunder & hail.}
- Wednesday*
13 April They say it once rained for "forty days & forty nights". It is going to repeat that spasm; evidently. Heavy rain overnight. Gale from S.W.; day bitterly cold; hail, rain & sleet. I spent part of day at shed (putting up) (lining) wool bins with sacking. Evening hail showers. Barometer 28.8.
- Thursday*
14 April Morning calm but cold. We mustered in Cave Rocks, drafting off some sheep (scraggs) for dog feed; Killed four of same; & cont'd work on Home Paddock fence. Afternoon rain & fog as usual. Barometer 29.6.
- Friday*
15 April Miserable day. Strong N'y. with dense fog; at times rain. Afternoon Jack, Mac & I went to Head of Bay; where I made shelter & cut & stacked ther[e]in a good supply of peat for Winter fuel. Getting "windy" about non-arrival of that boat!!!!!! Barometer 29.28.
- Saturday*
16 April Bitterly cold day. N.W. wind; rain & hail showers. We started work in yards but "knocked off" on a/c of condition of weather. I spent part of afternoon hunting up old bricks. We hope to brick in our range one of these days. It will help to save our coal; if we have to wait until November; we will have none too much of that commodity! Barometer 29.5.
- Sunday*
17 April To-day observed Sabbath. In forenoon Jack & I went for a stroll over Col. Morning that calm; afternoon E'y; dull; cold wind. I found time to bale

- out punt & put out wet wool. To-day first frost of season. Barometer 29.5. {1st Frost.}
- Monday*
18 April E'ly wind all night; a rotten day; heavy rain all day; most consistent; still continuing though wind has dropped. Barometer 28.96. {Paul 33 to-day.}
- Tuesday*
19 April To-day is first full day we have had for some time. Morning very threatening; but later calm; sunshine; cold N.W. wind. For a sighter I brought in & killed sheep for house. Remainder of day working at yards & shed. Paul & Mac cut & boated stakes from Beeman. Barometer 28.87.
- Wednesday*
20 April Winter fairly; S'ly all day with sleet showers. I put in the afternoon making a new gate for race. Boat not yet in sight. Barometer 29.04.
- Thursday*
21 April Snow on all tops this morning; calm morning; but threatening. Weather held up all day. Jack has been working about yards & homestead; while we made a trip to N.W. Bay. Some 12 lions at beach. Barometer 29.08. {"My birthday" "23".}
- Friday*
22 April Morning dull with mist. Afternoon strong N'ly with rain. Evening calm; good view of eclipse of moon. To-day I acted as "off-sider" to Jack who bricked in kitchen chimney; an O.K. job. Paul & Mac on odd jobs. Barometer 29.14. {Boat "3" weeks overdue.}
- Saturday*
23 April Day N'ly wind; fog on tops but later heavy fog & light rain. Paul, Mac & I have been over @ Sth. Pt., shepherding; numerous woollies on this block. Jack has been working about house plastering chimney etc. Barometer 29.44.
- Sunday*
24 April Calm day; heavy fog at times lifted. Observed Sabbath. Afternoon Paul & I killed three sheep for dogs. Jack & Bill went over to Beeman with the camera. Barometer 29.48.
- Monday*
25 April Cold miserable day; bitterly cold with rain hail & sleet showers after heavy rain overnight. No day out of doors; but had to bring in sheep from Col & killed one for house. In afternoon did washing. Boat 1 month overdue. Barometer 29.7.
- Tuesday*
26 April Cold night; frost; in morning flat calm. We pulled to Nellie's Rest in quest of dog tucker; but were unsuccessful in that direction. However; brought back a little firewood. Jack to-day finished his plastering of brickwork at range. An O.K. job. Evening cold N'ly. Barometer 29.8.
- Wednesday*
27 April Heavy rain overnight. Strong N.W. wind all day; sunshine in afternoon. To-day we mustered Beeman & after drafting rams, (100) drove out "5" to S.Col. & 3 to N.Col. Later shore three sheep. Barometer 29.68. {Muster Beeman.}
- Thursday*
28 April Rain overnight; ditto forenoon; with heavy fog; cold S.W. gale all day. Cleared up in afternoon; but too late to muster Cave Rocks. No boat yet. Barometer 29.68.

- Friday*
29 April A great day; one out of the box. Light N.W. wind; brilliant sun. A day with the sheep. Mustered Cave Rocks; drafted off fats; breeding ewes; scraggs & lambs; shore "9" woollies (last of season) Drove ewes, lambs & "2" rams to Cave Rocks. Fats to Beeman. Sheep to various paddocks. Boated "10" rams to Honey; above Terror Pt. A full day. To-day finished shearing for season. Total shorn "4134". Exceptionally good result under most adverse circumstances throughout season. Barometer 29.96. Very high.
- Saturday*
30 April Change from yesterday. Heavy rain throughout night. Fog to water's edge all day; drizzle afternoon. N.W. wind. Jack & I made a peat shelter; Mac has been making a new chimney for a stove. Barometer 29.52.
- Sunday*
1 May A rotten day; rain overnight; dense fog & drizzle all day. Observed Sabbath. Jack & Mac have been working all day on their stove. Barometer 29.6.
- Monday*
2 May Same old story; heavy rain overnight & in forenoon with heavy fog. Ran rams out to Garden Creek. Paul & I killed sheep for house & dogs. Mac & Jack finished stove & installed bath in big room running drain. Bill & I made up tallies. Barometer 29. {Evening heavy rain.}
- Tuesday*
3 May Rain overnight with bitterly cold wind from S.W. in forenoon with light showers. Afternoon very heavy rain. Not out of doors much to-day. Evening dressed two fowls for dinner to-morrow. Am getting towards end of my book; so will have to condense diary. Not much hope of boat before Novr. Barometer 29.6.
- Wednesday*
4 May "Beastly" day; mist; heavy rain showers, wind N.W.; turned out wethers from Home Paddock to S.Col; swept kitchen chimney. Afternoon; between showers carried fuel from Head of Bay. Barometer 29.44.
- Thursday*
5 May Rain overnight; light rain & fog in forenoon, clearing when too late to do anything with rams. However, we put in day digging a much needed drain at rear of house (long overdue). I also overhauled pelts; baled out punt & during day I had a look at rams at Garden Creek. Barometer 29.48.
- Friday*
6 May Dense fog all day with incessant rain. Given up hope of seeing boat; dissatisfaction rife; & justly so. To-day I mended a pair of boots. Saw sea lion in Bay to-day. Barometer 28.7.
- Saturday*
7 May Rain overnight; morning dull with N'y wind; very cold, afternoon heavy rain; evening calm. Barometer 28.28.
- Sunday*
8 May To-day Winter fairly. Awakened to find three inches of snow on ground!! A terrible day; cold snow showers throughout day. I put in afternoon chopping wood for the cook in the shed. Barometer 28.3. {"3" inches of snow.}
- Monday*
9 May "Snowed in"! Now four inches in some places. Snow showers over night & all day. Taps froze @ 4 pm! Being out of wood, between showers I

- carried some from N.Col paddock. Had a look around rams in afternoon. Barometer 28.86.
- Tuesday*
10 May Still "snowed in"!! Heavy rain in forenoon with N.E. wind. Afternoon W. wind; sleet & rain showers Paul & I brought in sheep from N.Col. (killed six for dogs). I also mustered rams from Garden Creek to N.Col. Both works of necessity; otherwise no day for out of doors. Barometer 28.60.
- Wednesday*
11 May Torrential rain overnight. Day very decent. Sunshine & calm. More rain towards evening. Forenoon I made repairs to house roof. Afternoon I killed two sheep for house; while "the rest" cut & boated wood from Beeman. Barometer 29.52.
- Thursday*
12 May Rain, hail, sleet & snow showers, after rain overnight. Very cold. Strong S.W. wind. To-day did washing. Good display Southern Lights. Barometer 29.46.
- Friday*
13 May Dull threatening morning, after the inevitable rain over night. Mid-day it came away rain & fog continuing all day. Miserable day. I spent day working at shed: making new gate etc. Barometer 29.76.
- Saturday*
14 May Here we are with that same old tale, yes, rain & more rain. To date we have had this month "one" fine day. Vile weather. Dense fog all day, heavy rain towards evening. Afternoon went around sheep in paddocks. Barometer 29.54.
- Sunday*
15 May Morning dull & threatening; turning to mist & drizzle in afternoon. Forenoon we mustered Beeman; got "2" rams; same to N.Col. Afternoon I re-staked top corner of N. Col paddock. To-night I shot "Scott". I have to date been here "18" months & have not yet seen her work. Hence shooting. Barometer 29.74.
- Monday*
16 May Yet another wet day. Dense fog. N.W. wind & drizzle. Maybe the weather will improve sometime. Barometer 29.44.
- Tuesday*
17 May Dense fog to waters edge all day with continuous drizzle rain. Afternoon Mac & I rowed to Beeman in rain; bringing back wood he had cut the other day. Eternal wet weather. Barometer 29.78.
- Wednesday*
18 May Same old tale. Heavy fog with drizzle at times. In forenoon I drove wethers & four rams to Capstan Bay. Could hold wethers no longer; so turned out half of them: the four rams had found their way into S. Col. paddock. If this damnable weather continues; the only thing to do is turn out rams at random (no pun). That only emphasises need of place being fenced into block where it could be worked much easier; with less regard as to weather. Afternoon Mac & I went to Beeman & cut firewood in readiness to boat when opportunity offers - yes, when it does!!! Barometer 29.54.
- Thursday*
19 May Dense fog to water's edge all day; with drizzle & rain. However, everything must end sometime. Barometer 29.44.

- Friday* Dense fog to water's edge, with drizzle; after much rain early morning.
20 May Same as yesterday; yes; but to-day the fog was denser & the rain wetter!!!. Wind N'y. Barometer 29.45.
- Saturday* Wild morning. Gale from N'y with heavy rain practically all day; heavy
21 May fog covering Island. Barometer 29.04.
- Sunday* Dull threatening morning. Later cleared; calm day, dull; but no rain.
22 May Brought in sheep from S. Col; drafted off scraggs for dogs; same to Garden Creek. Also ran five rams to N.Col, they had got in with wethers in S. Col paddock. Later I killed sheep for house. Afternoon boated wood from Beeman. On way around espied a seal on beach. On close inspection he proved to be dead. Had not been long out of water. Evidently had come up to die quietly. Barometer 29.4.
- Monday* Morning dull & calm. Mustered in rams & drove out "9" of same to Sth.
23 May Pt. & Square Hill. Lost two hoggetts; but remainder settled down travelling well. Numerous woollies at Square Hill. Light rain on way home & still continuing. Home 3.30 pm. Barometer 29.2.
- Tuesday* Dead calm all day. Very dull. Rain set in about 2 pm. & cont'd during
24 May afternoon with fog. Forenoon boated rams to Honey & Nellies Rest; bringing back a load of firewood. Barometer 29.16.
- Wednesday* Dull day with N.W. to N'y wind; strong wind; no rain. Forenoon drove
25 May 10 Rams to Filholl & Lake Valley. One took to water (drowned). Afternoon 8 to Peaks. Of course they broke; we had to muster Beeman; eventually got them over fence & roused along face. Home 5.30 pm. Quite dark. Barometer 29.2.
- Thursday* Last night a terrible gale - & she blows here. E'y with steady rain all day.
26 May Veering to N.W. in evening!!!! Punt broke moorings; dragging on wharf. However beached at high water. Barometer 28.34.
- Friday* For a "sighter" heavy snow showers; Island under snow. Nothing much
27 May on to-day. Secured punt in forenoon; afternoon load of wood from the Grave. Afternoon calm; sunshine. Barometer 28.56.
- Saturday* Beautiful day after frost last night; rain early in evening. Mustered in
28 May rams & wethers; drove out "14" rams to Duma & Paris. Home 6 pm. Satisfactory drive. Took 100 wethers with Paris rams. One pug at Penguin Creek. Saw 8 wild duck at Garden Creek on way home. A pug made his appearance off wharf this morning; he did not stay long; should I say long enough. Barometer 28.86.
- Sunday* Cold, dull morning; heavy rain overnight. Afternoon a blizzard set in; 3
29 May inches of snow in about ten minutes; later snow showers; bitterly cold night. S'y wind. Observed Sabbath to-day. Scrubbed out. Barometer 28.5.
- Monday* Rotten day! Heavy rain overnight; day showery; very raw; N.W. wind.
30 May Turned out rams to N.Col. paddock; killed sheep for dogs; ground tools; odd jobs. Barometer 28.86.

- Tuesday* A "Hell of a Day". Fog; gale (hurricane) from N'ly; with heavy rain all day! That completed the month of May. Reading back I see we have had "5" (five!!!) fine days this month & one a Sunday. Some record!!!!!!!!!!!!!!
31 May Barometer 28.56.
- Wednesday* Showery early; cleared later; sunshine; strong N'ly wind. Evening rough.
1 June To-day we drove rams to N.Col; Peaks; Fey & Azimuth (some 30 wethers in mob.) Great sea on @ N.W. Bay. This completes distribution of rams. Barometer 28.74.
- Thursday* Heavy rain overnight. Snow shower for a "sighter". Remainder of day sunshine, heavy hail shower evening. N'ly wind. Paul has been over Nth. Col, rousing up sheep to Rams. The "rest" cut & boated wood from Beeman. Barometer 29.04.
- Friday* Raw day with strong N.W. wind; no rain. North End under snow! We have been out at Duma to-day (shepherding). Jack has been working about house. This morning a pug seal had taken possession of the path at the punt. He did not stay there long. Two hens laying. Barometer
3 June 29.48.
- Saturday* Morning heavy rain; wind N'ly. Afternoon fine; very cold wind; commenced cleaning gratings at shed. Barometer 29.32.
4 June
- Sunday* Observed Sabbath. A "rotten" day. Gale from N'ly with rain all afternoon. Barometer 29.2
5 June
- Monday* Flat calm after rain overnight. Forenoon cont'd cleaning out gratings. Afternoon E'ly with heavy rain. Commenced to mend pair of boots. Barometer 28.88.
6 June
- Tuesday* Two inches snow this morning. Snow showers throughout day. Evening heavy rain; thunder & lightening. To-day I mended boots & made pair of clogs for Bill. Itinerary of days weather: snow, frost; sleet; sunshine (5 minutes), rain, thunder, lightening: Some day!!!!. Barometer 28.84.
7 June
- Wednesday* Steady heavy rain until mid-day. afternoon showery. Cold N.W. wind. Afternoon Paul & I went out to Beeman & boated two wethers to shed. Were both soaked in process. Rotten day. Barometer 28.98.
8 June
- Thursday* More snow; hail & snow showers all day; freezing all day; S'ly wind. Paul & I killed sheep for house; afternoon we cut & carried wood from N.Col our supply being "fini". Barometer 29.44.
9 June
- Friday* Wind W'ly. Rain more or less all day (mostly more). I put in day at shed making a new gate for yards. Barometer 29.20.
10 June
- Saturday* Dull, raw day; S'ly; snow in evening. Two loads of firewood from Beeman. Afternoon killed another pig; food getting short. Barometer
11 June 29.28.
- Sunday* Observed Sabbath. Cold day; no rain; dull: did washing; took out Depôt boat; afternoon went for a stroll to Cave Rock. Carried home bundle of firewood. Barometer 29.32.
12 June

- Monday*
13 June Morning dull; fresh breeze. Forenoon sailed to Green Point; brought home dog tucker; stiff pull home. Afternoon we took the two boats to Frenchman's Grave: bringing back firewood. Otherwise an ordinary day. Barometer 29.34.
- Tuesday*
14 June Miserable day; fog; N'ly wind. Rain practically all day!!! Barometer 29.1.
- Wednesday*
15 June Morning threatening; dull; drizzle towards evening. Two loads of firewood from Bushy Pt to-day. Wood pile looking healthy. Approaching shortest day; consequently hours short. Barometer 29.6.
- Thursday*
16 June Morning dull; glass high; N'ly wind. We have been shepherding at Mon[ument] Heads & Filholl to-day. Some "9" pugs at Head beach. Rain on way home. Soaked. Home 4.30 pm. Unpleasant day. Jack had been cutting wood at the Grave. Barometer 29.68.
- Friday*
17 June N'ly wind; strong wind; day threatening. Forenoon I mustered Beeman. Paul boated back sheep; killed same for house. Afternoon put dinghy in shed. Cleaned out water tables about house. Barometer 29.18.
- Saturday*
18 June Morning calm; mist; afternoon drizzle most of time. Forenoon Jack & I picked up a load of wood from the Grave. Later work on gates at shed. Took lining out of dinghy. Bill to-day ill; Mac has assumed his duties. Barometer 29.3.
- Sunday*
19 June Calm morning; beautiful day. High glass. No sunshine. Calm all day. We have been down the harbour to-day. Bill & Jack went across to Honey in the dinghy. Took the camera with them. Moonlight night. Barometer 29.90.
- Monday*
20 June Good day; very dull; calm; no rain. I went over N. & S. Col to-day; rousing up sheep. Good view out to sea; but no shipping in sight. Saw the old mare on Col: looking very fat. Barometer 29.80 -2
- Tuesday*
21 June Shortest Day. Morning; early misty; later fine; afternoon rain & mist. I put in afternoon working at shed on new gates - also repairing old ones. Made another raid on Depôt for provisions. Barometer 29.5.
- Wednesday*
22 June Wind N'ly; rain; drizzle & heavy fog. A miserable day. I put a couple of hours @ shed. Cook unwell to-day. Barometer 29.48.
- Thursday*
23 June Heavy rain overnight. Morning showery. I finished new gate for Cave Rocks paddock. Afternoon fine; saw sun for a few minutes. Sailed to Terror Point for dog tucker - unsuccessful. Brought back a load of rails. Showers evening. Barometer 29.04.
- Friday*
24 June Calm morning. Not too settled for a sighter; but later a great day; sunshine practically all day. Bill has been unwell to-day; Mac has been giving him a hand. Paul & I mustered out Beeman & S.Col "respect" [sic]. Killed one sheep for house & three for dogs. Jack has been working about house. Barometer 28.72.
- Saturday*
25 June Cold raw day; snow & sleet showers; glimpses of sun. Did washing; took dogs to Head of Bay. Afternoon I worked @ shed. Barometer 28.54.

- Sunday* Very heavy rain overnight. Snow on tops. Very cold day. Afternoon went
26 June for walk to Beeman (with dogs). The day of rest. Barometer 29.18.
- Monday* One or two showers for a start. Spent forenoon at shed & yards.
27 June Afternoon Mac & I went over to Col. Saw two whales @ Bay. Rain came
on. Home wet @ 4.30 pm. Barometer 29.32. {"2" Whales.}
- Tuesday* Wind about W'ly. Some showers during day; & some moments of
28 June sunshine. I spent day cutting ditch at back of shed. Went to Garden
Creek with dogs before tea. Barometer 29.22.
- Wednesday* Fog forenoon; afternoon heavy drizzle. A pug made his appearance at
29 June wharf; he did not stay there long!!! Some odd jobs occupied remainder
of day; grinding tools etc. Barometer 29.28.
- Thursday* A rotten wet day. Heavy rain all night & most of day (with fog).
30 June Barometer 29.
- Friday* A repetition of yesterday. Heavy rain & gale from N'ly overnight. Heavy
1 July showers with sleet during day. Cold. Boxing before tea (first for some
weeks). Barometer 28.92.
- Saturday* Yes; rain all day & every day. Terrible weather. During day I boated a
2 July sheep from Beeman & got wet in process. Barometer 28.9.
- Sunday* Terrible day. Gale N.N.W. with much rain; mostly thick drizzle. Went up
3 July to head of Bay towards evening with dogs. Ten foot leopard on the
beach. First I have seen this Winter (& biggest). Barometer 28.64. {"10"
foot Leopard.}
- Monday* Cold N. W'ly with skifs of drizzle. Firstly we dressed some food for dogs.
4 July Boated some wood from Head of Bay. Afternoon I went out to back of
Cave Rocks where I made repairs to gate, while the others cut & boated
wood from Beeman. Barometer 29.16.
- Tuesday* Yet another wet day. Rain, drizzle, & fog to water's edge. Very dreary
5 July day. To-day I took a lesson in baking!!! Sea lion at Head of Bay near
shore. Barometer 28.6.
- Wednesday* Terrible day after a wild night. S.W. wind & very cold. All day heavy rain
6 July & sleet showers, with a little snow. Took ill to-day. Barometer 29.
- Thursday* Morning cold, calm & dull. I worked on race @ yards until 2 pm when
7 July heavy rain & drizzle set in. Then painted a gate in shed. Quiet day as
usual. Barometer 29.42.
- Friday* Not a bad day. A little sunshine. Light drizzle showers towards evening.
8 July To-day we boated firewood from Bushy Pt., while Paul killed sheep for
house. Yes, we get about one day in ten fine (on that one we get
wood!!!). Barometer 29.66.
- Saturday* It is ever thus! Rain (at times heavy), drizzle & fog. Strong wind veering
9 July from W'ly to S'ly. Did washing to-day. Barometer 29.44.
- Sunday* Strong wind from N.W. all day; very dull, light showers; heavier towards
10 July evening. In forenoon I made bread for Bill & in afternoon took my dogs
out as far as "Smoky". Barometer 29.28.

- Monday* Strong W'ly wind with some heavy rain showers. Boxing lesson to-day.
11 July Not much to write about these days. So far our Winter has not been as cold as last; but we have had more rain infinitely. Barometer 28.84.
- Tuesday* A "hell" of a day. Indeed we have had very little of any other variety for some weeks!!! Heavy rain all day! Truly "40" days & "40" nights. We are thinking of roofing in the Island. I put in part of day at shed. Wind about N.W. Barometer 28.2.
- Wednesday* Snow on tops. Severe frost; taps frozen; more frost during day. Snow & hail showers in morning. Afternoon I boated wood from Head of Bay. Later calm, glimpses of sun. "Waru", (one of our shed cats) has been missing for a week. Barometer 29.08.
- Thursday* Thought yesterday's frost would break the "weather": no, snow & heavy rain all night con't. until mid-day. Afternoon finer; everything soaking. Took a walk to Honey beach in afternoon. Wind during day N.W. Barometer 29.
- Friday* Change in weather!!! Yes, steady rain all day until 4 pm. They want a new washer on tap above!!! Jack made a whip for me to-day. Wind N.W. to W. Barometer 28.48.
- Saturday* Awful day ("awful" is a "feminine" word) For a sighter I rowed to Beeman; gale blowing; nearly upset. Caught a sheep but could not come back in boat; harbour by this time smoking. Remainder of day 90 mile an hour gale with heavy rain from N.N.E.; worst blow this winter. Paul went up later & freed sheep. Barometer 27.9.
- Sunday* Fine day for a change: showery for start; sunshine at times. Went to Head of Bay where we cut & boated back firewood. An "8" foot leopard on beach. Afternoon I brought a sheep from Beeman & killed same for house. Mac & Paul cut & boated more wood from Beeman. Barometer 28.2.
- Monday* Recognised to-day as Sunday. Very cold day though sunshine all day from 10 am. One or two showers early. S'ly wind. Snow on tops. Morning I did some baking. Had boxing lesson afternoon; later went for a walk over S. Col & Duma. Counted "14" cattle @ Col. Barometer 29.12.
- Tuesday* N'ly wind; mist; slight rain only at times. I made repairs to shed door & painted same. Barometer 28.74
- Wednesday* Half a gale from N'ly all day with rain all day!!! I spent afternoon mending clothes. A dreary day. Barometer 28.28.
- Thursday* Steady rain until 3 am. Then with change of wind severe frost & snow. Island under snow. Snow showers during day. Very cold. Barometer 28.86.
- Friday* Terrible day. Worst of my experience. Very heavy rain & thunder overnight. Smoking from S'ly all day with snow & hail showers. Terribly cold. Am sure sheep have not been dry for "5" weeks. Now some five weeks since we had a decent day. Don't you think one would be tired of

- it (especially as we expected to be in N.Z. three months ago). That was the condition under which we stopped on. Barometer 28.6.
- Saturday*
23 July Very cold day. Bitter S'ly. Island under snow. Afternoon Mac & I boated wood from Beeman (work of necessity). Barometer 29.38.
- Sunday*
24 July Drizzling showers all day. Light W'ly. Afternoon Mac & I cut & boated wood from Beeman. Home @ 5.30 pm. Quite dark. Barometer 29.74.
- Monday*
25 July Grand day; some sunshine. Paul & I put down new moorings at wharf. Later I boated a new gate to Garden Creek. Afternoon we went down Harbour. One small pug beyond Terror Pt. Brought back firewood from Bushy Pt. Mac had boated wood from the Grave. Quite a pleasure to be out to-day. Barometer 29.94. Very High.
- Tuesday*
26 July Light E'ly all day with showers of drizzle. Quiet day. Made minor repairs to floor of wharf. Also odd jobs. Barometer 29.64.
- Wednesday*
27 July Light E'ly all day with slight drizzle. Jack & I cut & boated firewood from Beeman. Paul tarred & caulked "Uno". Later I went out to Garden Creek & swung new gate for Cave Rocks. Barometer 29.4.
- Thursday*
28 July Dull day. Light N.E'ly. Showers early; remainder of day fine. Evening rain. The "firm" has been digging a channel on beach to-day (necessary when unloading wood). Also made "clean up" of store & shed. Barometer 28.78.
- Friday*
29 July Cold out to-day. One or two showers. Sunshine at times. To-day I put in at shed overhauling pelts, tarring dinghy, etc., - went to Garden Creek before tea. Barometer 28.68.
- Saturday*
30 July N'ly wind. Cold; showers early. I brought a sheep from Beeman. Later "dumped" result of "clean up" the other day. Also caulked Dépôt boat. The usual "quiet" day. Barometer 28.94.
- Sunday*
31 July Strong E'ly all day. Thick rain from mid-afternoon: continuing. Morning I repaired boots. Afternoon went out as far as the "Observatory". Soaked thru. on way home. Barometer 28.7.
- Monday*
1 August Fog to water's edge with drizzle all day; light E'ly wind. Miserable day. I put in afternoon at shed. Glass low. Barometer 28.24.
- Tuesday*
2 August Very low glass all day; calm day; very foggy with slight drizzle showers. Jack & I boated wood from Beeman while Mac boated some from Head of Bay. Afternoon I tarred dinghy. Barometer 27.9.
- Wednesday*
3 August Calm day; heavy mist with usual drizzle showers. Have not seen sun for some time. Remarkably calm weather for so low a glass. Very wet underfoot. I mustered in sheep from Beeman; afternoon we killed one for house & five culls for dogs. I boated to Honey a ram & ewe that had got in with wethers. Later I painted dinghy & took out a new gate to S.Col paddock. Barometer 28.

- Thursday*
4 August Wet miserable day. Snow on tops. Very cold. Strong S.E'ly with much rain. Heavy swell in harbour. Punt broke loose during day; but we made her "jake aloo" [all right] at low water. Barometer 28.34.
- Friday*
5 August Winter fairly: "3" in. snow. Calm day; snow & hail showers. Very cold; glimpses of sun. Heavy swell on beach. Heaviest I have seen here. Did washing. Barometer 28.3. {3 in. snow.}
- Saturday*
6 August Awful day. Every tap frozen this morning. Bitterly cold day. Blizzard from S'ly practically all day. Particularly heavy snow. Island quite picturesque under snow. (3" in places). Did not venture beyond woolshed. To-day "Waru" made his re-appearance at shed after being absent for 30 days. Had given up hopes of his coming back. Barometer 28.32.
- Sunday*
7 August Terrible day; in fact to-day I think has been the coldest day I have experienced in the short time I have lived. Freezing all night & all day. Gale from S'ly with blizzard. Snow now "6". Drifts some feet thick about shed & banks. Kept fire warm to-day. Looking forward to arrival of boat. Barometer 28.52.
- Monday*
8 August Flat calm to-day; sunshine forenoon; contrast from yesterday. Practically no thaw to-day. Still inches of snow. To-day I put new moorings on punt & erected new shelf for cook in kitchen! Paul & Jack have been fitting new stern post to Depôt boat. Took walk to Garden Creek before tea. Now freezing. Barometer 28.78.
- Tuesday*
9 August Change from yesterday; back to the same old thing; yes, strong N.W. wind with drizzle & rain all day. Mist on tops. Weather!!! Looking back over last few months we have had but a fine day here & there. I did some baking to-day & commenced to make a whip handle. Barometer 28.72.
- Wednesday*
10 August The usual rotten day. Gale from N.W. to W with rain all day, particularly in forenoon. Harbour smoking. Swept kitchen chimney. (smoked out this morning; fire would not "go"; now improved). Finished that whip handle. Barometer 28.88.
- Thursday*
11 August High glass; but a terrible day!!! Bitterly cold; S'ly gale with snow, hail & rain showers. Ground white towards evening. Afternoon Mac & I carried firewood from N.Col. paddock. Anyone reading this a/c of last eight weeks would have nothing but sympathy for us existing in this damnable weather. Barometer 29.34.
- Friday*
12 August To-day was "der tag". Frosty in shade all day; a grand day. Sunshine & calm; a real treat. When you get one day in ten fine; you must prepare for the other nine!! Jack, Mac & I cut & boated firewood from Bushy Pt; Paul working on Depôt boat. Later I mustered Beeman (a lot of trouble; sheep on main top). After tea killed one sheep. Now frosty. Barometer 29.89. {Fine day.}
- Saturday*
13 August Great gale from E'ly last night. Shook house some. Paul & I at midnight beached boat that was moored off wharf. To-day a miserable day. Barometer 28.68.

- Sunday*
14 August Strong N.E. wind with usual rain & fog. Cold out. Paul & I killed sheep. Not a bad day. Cold S'ly with slight snow showers. Glimpses of sun. In forenoon we killed our last pig. (shortage of pig food very acute). Afternoon Mac & I went to Beeman & cut firewood. Now showery. Barometer 29.1. {Killed Pig.}
- Monday*
15 August Usual miserable day. N.W. wind with showers. Heavy rain overnight. Nothing doing. Went over to Garden Creek before tea. Barometer 29.16.
- Tuesday*
16 August Rain overnight. Mist on tops; forenoon fair; afternoon showers of drizzle. Now very thick. Forenoon Mac & I boated firewood from Beeman; the "remainder" completing work on Dépôt boat. Mac & I spent afternoon at the Grave; where we bundled two loads of wood; brought one home. Barometer 29.18. {1st Hawk of Season.}
- Wednesday*
17 August It is a pity that there are not "400" days in the year; it would then have some "35" more on which to rain. To-day the inevitable N.W. wind with rain, drizzle & fog. Barometer 28.94.
- Thursday*
18 August Dull morning after rough night. Hail showers & frost. To-day I went with my dogs to N.E. Harbour. A good walk leaving home @ 11.30 am: arriving home 5 pm. First time I have been to the huts since I came here. That was the site of Cook's whaling party's camp. Had a good look about; four buildings in O.K. order; took a mental inventory of material there inc. some "250" casks. An interesting day. One pug & one lion on beach. Brought home some nails. We have none here! Sleet showers in evening. Cold S'ly. Barometer 29.82. {Trip to N.E. Harbour.}
- Friday*
19 August A grand day. Flat calm; one or two light showers early. Snow the Nth end tops. Sunshine for a time. Forenoon we took in cut from N.Col. Sheep in very poor condition. Culled for dogs. Also one for house. Afternoon Mac & Jack bundled wood @ Head of Bay. Paul & I boated stakes from Terror Pt. Evening I killed sheep for house. Paul took out sheep. Barometer 30.18. Very High.
- Saturday*
20 August Out for a stroll before breakfast this morning; found two leopards on beach @ the "Brothers" Mac had heard a seal in water opp. house late last night; thought he would come ashore; hence the early ramble. Not very big leopards (but big enough). About mid-forenoon E'ly rain set. Remainder of day beastly to say least. Cold E'ly & driving rain. Afternoon I did washing & killed two scraggs we had in shed. Still raining. Barometer 29.84.
- Sunday*
21 August The Sabbath. Steady light rain until mid-afternoon. Fine then for two hours. Went out to Head of Bay for a stroll during this two hour break in the weather. Calm day. Heavy drizzle towards evening. Boxing today. Barometer 29.94.
- Monday*
22 August Does not matter how high the glass goes; the weather can't improve. Flat calm this morning; but fog & drizzle forenoon & part of afternoon.



The old whaling camp at Nor-west Bay. Sketch by W.R. Fleck.

Jack & Mac went to Beeman for wood afternoon; I made some repair work @ corner Home Paddock. A miserable day: they are all the same. We are beginning to count the weeks until boat is due; or rather due again; she is now "5" months overdue. Barometer 30.1.

- Tuesday*
23 August The same dreary wet day. Much rain overnight. Fog to water's edge all day, with drizzle & rain; rain particularly in forenoon. N'ly wind. Barometer 29.96.
- Wednesday*
24 August Dull morning; mist showers early forenoon. Later "we" went around sheep on Duma. Saw "5" lambs in Valley!! First of season. Home 5 pm. Jack put in day @ Beeman cutting firewood. Evening calm. Good day with sunshine from mid-day. Barometer 30.24. {"5" lambs Duma.}
- Thursday*
25 August Calm morning; dull. Light mist showers during day. Now N'ly wind. We rowed to Nellies Rest: pulled up boat. Had a good look around sheep. Home 5 pm. Barometer 30.14. {Goose died to-day.}
- Friday*
26 August Dull threatening morning. N.N.E. wind. Mac & I set out for N.W. Bay @ 9.15 am. Light rain on arrival there; later cleared; strong wind. Had good look around sheep along "Look out Point" Flats. Cup of tea at hut. One

- pug & four lions beach. Home 5 pm. Driving rain from Col. Now showery. Feed "off" on run; sheep scouring beaches. Barometer 29.5.
- Saturday*
27 August Light N'ly with drizzle showers. Forenoon I boated a sheep & some wood from Head of Bay. Mac & Jack brought wood from Beeman. Afternoon I boated more bundles wood from Bay & Grave. Paul killed sheep. Barometer 29.6.
- Sunday*
28 August The Sabbath. A rough day. Strong N.N.E. wind, with rain showers early forenoon & late afternoon. Wild looking to Nth. Evening calmer. Another goose sick; feeding about store; not too bright. Ten eggs to-day. Barometer 28.88.
- Monday*
29 August Calm morning: arose early as had hopes of a good day. After breakfast however, heavy rain from S.W. with bitter wind. Rain all forenoon; afternoon fine but very raw & cold. I put in most of day at shed. Put lining in dinghy. Work on gates at yard. Barometer 29.58.
- Tuesday*
30 August Rain overnight. Mist all day; drizzle showers forenoon. Cold N.W. Wind. Jack & I put in day @ Beeman cutting firewood. Killed sick goose to-day. Barometer 29.54.
- Wednesday*
31 August Miserable day; drizzle showers; frequent especially afternoon. Evening very thick. Jack & I put in day @ Beeman again: now a good supply of wood on beach. Mac having trouble with his eye; not able to go out. To-day finishes month with six fine days. Barometer 28.98.
- Thursday*
1 September Rain overnight. Strong S'ly to-day. Very cold wind. Showery. I did some papering in my room. Afternoon was at Head of Bay cutting stakes for a job at Beeman when saw a leopard on beach. Evening calmer. Barometer 29.56.
- Friday*
2 September Strong N'ly this morning. Paul & I boated two loads of firewood from Beeman. Also dressed dog tucker. A wet day from high water; flood rain all afternoon. I put in time on gates at shed. "Dinkie" our mascot fowl laid her first egg to-day. Barometer 28.9.
- Saturday*
3 September Good display of Southern Lights last night. Cold day. S. to S.W. wind with cold rain showers; sometimes sleet. Forenoon I boated sheep from Beeman; very poor condition; dog working well. Afternoon I tarred gates at shed & later finished repairing break fence at Beeman bridge. Barometer 29.12.
- Sunday*
4 September Rain forenoon; drizzle etc. from W'ly. Afternoon finer. Forenoon I did washing. After lunch took a stroll to Col; no whales in Bay; gave sheep a rouse up. Evening W. wind. Barometer 29.18.
- Monday*
5 September A wet miserable day. N. to N.W. wind with fine rain & much of it. A quiet day as usual about house. Evening boisterous. Barometer 28.84.
- Tuesday*
6 September Last night a hurricane with very heavy rain. House shaken some!! To-day back to Winter; but we are never far from it here. Snow well down; very cold S.W. with snow & hail showers; very heavy in evening. I

Although short of vegetables, the musters were able to get a few eggs.



overhauled pelts at shed. & later cleaned out lambs pen. Record to-day; "11" eggs. Barometer 29.16.

Wednesday
7 September

Cold day. Strong N.W. to N'ly wind; with drizzle from mid-afternoon: rain evening. Ducks laid first eggs of season. Barometer 29.32.

Thursday
8 September

Had a bad night last night. Had to keep to bed; up for an hour in afternoon. Feeling near O.K. to-night. A miserable day; dense fog; half gale from N'ly with a steady flood rain most of day.

Friday
9 September

Must have been some inches of rain last night. It merely dropped down. Dull forenoon; beautiful day from mid-day. Calm with brilliant sunshine; best few hours for some months. Jack & Paul boated wood from Beeman. Am a little better to-day; but had to take things quietly. Barometer 29.14.

Saturday
10 September

A beautiful day. Calm; sunshine all day: what a change. Mac & Paul went round sheep @ Sth. Pt. (they saw a leopard on beach at Observatory). Jack put in day at Beeman. I was in bed until mid-day. Took advantage of sun for two hours in afternoon. Now a strong E'ly gale & cold: rain threatening. Barometer 29.22.

Sunday
11 September

To-day the antithesis of yesterday as this Winter is of last. Simply awful. You get nothing "thrown in" here; if you have a good day then you pay for it. Last night a hurricane from N.E. to E'ly & then N'ly with torrential rain & worse than that. A gale; blew things about. Fortunately roof stayed on. However, lost roof of duckling house etc. When the weather clears (when) we will put in some time looking for things. The day no better than the night. Gale from N'ly with very heavy rain. Everything flooded. Rain & gale still raging. Now a word about our stores. We had vegetables for "6" weeks only. Have forgotten what they are like. We are also out of coffee, cocoa, jam etc. Milk will last a few days. Butter is not fit to eat (we can use it for baking yet) tea will not see this month out. So

- much for the essentials; of course other things we have long since forgotten about. Also the boat is nearly six months overdue. One can understand that all these things do not make for best of feeling about the place. Hope "Day of Deliverance" will soon dawn. Barometer 28.25.
- Monday*
12 September Morning rough. Day showery from mid-day. Sunshine between showers. Evening very cold. I killed a sheep which Paul brought from Beeman; Mac & I put roof back on duck house. Barometer 28.92.
- Tuesday*
13 September Not a bad day; showery evening. I put in some time at yards & later picked up Jack & a load of wood from Beeman. Mac went out to N.W. Bay to-day; not home 7 pm. Paul & I set out for hut with provisions etc. However, met Mac near Capstan Bay on way home; no harm had come to him; arrived home @ 9.30 pm. Moonlight night; one heavy shower. Barometer 28.98.
- Wednesday*
14 September Merely a wet day & a very wet one too. Flood rain practically all day. Snow on tops. Light N.W. wind. Very heavy rain last light with heavy thunder @ 3.15 am. Mended Bill's clogs to-day. Barometer 28.66.
- Thursday*
15 September Awful day! Awakened to find Island under snow. Back to Winter with a vengeance. But, as I have said before; we are never far from it. A blizzard pract. all day from S'ly. Could not venture past door. Not improving! Finish milk today. Barometer 29.
- Friday*
16 September Am afraid the weather has been getting worse instead of better. Very heavy rain overnight & cont. until after mid-day. Sunshine for two hours in afternoon; but a bitterly cold wind blowing. Still cont. Barometer 29.04.
- Saturday*
17 September Very cold morning, with a heavy hail shower at about 10 am. Remainder of day quite fine with glimpses of sun. Wind S.W. We have been to N.W. Bay where we put the hut in all order for mustering season. No lions on beach; one leopard. Few lambs on Col. Home 6 pm. Jack put in day at Beeman. Barometer 29.12.
- Sunday*
18 September Taking advantage of what turned out to be a grand day (after a dull morning), we put in a day on run. Mac & I went to Mon. Head & Sq. Hill, Paul to Sth. Point. Saw evidence of hawks having killed & eaten lambs; three instances; one pug seal on beach. Lambing looks promising though not general yet. Saw some "30" woollies Square Hill. Home 8 pm. Calm evening. Barometer 29.2.
- Monday*
19 September Fine day; calm; dull; put in day down harbour for dog tucker. Saw lambs at end of Peaks. Home quite late. Barometer 29.08.
- Tuesday*
20 September Another fine day; making four consecutive ones; surely we will pay for this! That reads dismally. Mild, calm, & a perfect evening. Cook unwell to-day. Forenoon I made & erected a new gate at Beeman. Later boated back a sheep; in evening killed same. Some trouble getting that sheep. Barometer 28.6.

- Wednesday*
21 September Rain early; but remainder forenoon decent sunshine; I mustered sheep from N. Col paddock; killed "5" culls for dogs. Afternoon wet; sleet showers; change from forenoon. Cold S.E. wind. E. end under snow. Afternoon I did washing & mended boots. Barometer 28.8.
- Thursday*
22 September Rain (steady) until mid-afternoon; sleet in the rain; cold wind from N.W. to S.W. Took a stroll to Head of Bay in evening; a leopard on the beach. Barometer 29.18.
- Friday*
23 September Heavy showers of drizzle with strong N.Wind. Forenoon I made & fitted new sleeve & cowl to kitchen chimney: afternoon we boated firewood from Beeman; later odd jobs about yards. Barometer 29.3.
- Saturday*
24 September Gale from N'ly all day; heavy rain from high water; about 3.30 pm. Still continuing. Wild night. Spent day working at yards. Barometer 28.94.
- Sunday*
25 September Morning brought. Strong N'ly; showers. Afternoon sunshine; strong wind. Forenoon I repaired stock of my rifle; afternoon took stroll to Duma via Filholl; home thru Cave Rocks. One lamb Cave Rocks. Barometer 29.54.
- Monday*
26 September Terrible day. Gale from N'ly to N.W. Harbour "smoking". Drizzle forenoon; flood rain from mid-day. Still continuing. Forenoon odd jobs at shed. Barometer 29.24.
- Tuesday*
27 September Sunshine for two hours. Remainder of day dull, dry; cold N.W. wind. Evening rain. Forenoon I mustered Beeman & killed sheep for house. Spent afternoon in yards. Remainder of staff working on Depôt boat & cutting wood @ Beeman. Took a stroll to Col scrub in evening. Lambs out that way. Barometer 29.48.
- Wednesday*
28 September Dreary day. Cold N.W. & N'ly wind; drizzle at times. A bit off colour to-day. Went out to Garden Creek in evening. Set a hen to-night. Barometer 29.56. {Set Hen "10" eggs.}
- Thursday*
29 September Same miserable sort of day. Cold wind from N'ly & N.W. with showers of drizzle. I put in day papering out Sitting room. Spring cleaning. Our hen has taken to her eggs O.K. Barometer 29.46.
- Friday*
30 September Very heavy rain overnight; fog to water's edge all day; Cold with N'ly with drizzle practically all day. Very miserable. Did a little more spring cleaning about house. Barometer 28.98.
- Saturday*
1 October A wet miserable day to herald in new month; which I hope is my last in this outfit. Usual cold N. to N.W. wind with heavy drizzle after rain overnight. Paul & I boated wood from Beeman; a work of necessity. Evening cleared; went out to Beeman. Paul & Bill went fishing. Catch "2" Barometer 28.66.
- Sunday*
2 October Beastly day after very heavy rain overnight. Bitterly cold W.N.W. wind with heavy hail showers. Sunshine between same. Afternoon went out to Cave Rocks; two lambs. Last night made raid on Depôt for tea; being ourselves out of such commodity. Barometer 28.9.

- Monday*
3 October Awful day. Hurricane from N.W. & W. (sometimes N.) Stiffest blow I have seen here & that is some. Evening eased a little. Heavy rain overnight. Rain during day. Shed roof in danger of going!! Bill unwell to-day. Beginning to again look for boat. Barometer 28.7.
- Tuesday*
4 October Showery day. Cold wind from W & then Nth. Sleet early. Evening a gale from Nth. Glimpses of sun during day. I put in day with Beeman wethers. Brought in same; killed one for house; culled four. Later put in time at yards & shed. "Rest" getting wood. Barometer 29.4.
- Wednesday*
5 October Calm day with steady rain until 4 pm. Cleared for an hour; evening showery. Barometer 29.1.
- Thursday*
6 October Forenoon heavy showers. Sunshine afternoon. Bitter wind all day. Odd jobs shed afternoon. Garden Creek evening; a goose sitting at Creek; three eggs. Very cold evening. Barometer 29.42.
- Friday*
7 October Grand day. First this month. One or two light showers. Steady W. breeze; sunshine. Forenoon we boated wood from Bushy Point: "2" good loads. I spent remainder of day at yards. Put out drying cloths. Evening a lion made his appearance off boat noost [mooring]: made off when disturbed. Evening fine. Barometer 29.64. {I.}
- Saturday*
8 October Beautiful day: Best ever. Bright sunshine; warm & calm. For a sighter Jack & I boated wood from Head of Bay. Mac & I then went over to Honey for dog tucker. Afternoon I tarred duck house. Also other work about place. Put out drying cloths. Evening; took dogs to Cave Rocks. Great night. Barometer 29.6. {II.}
- Sunday*
9 October Another good day; sunshine; at times fog on tops. Jack, Bill & I to-day made ascent of Mt Honey. (1866 ft.) our highest hill. Grand view all around Island from top. Bill took camera. Good few lambs on Honey. Left names in bottle on top. Home 4 pm. Last night we had a great display of Southern lights. Best I have ever seen. Saw albatross on way to water. Barometer 29.54. {III. Great display Southern Lights.}
- Monday*
10 October Light E'ly all day with heavy fog; at times light drizzle; sun breaking thru. Sighter I boated sheep from Beeman. Took Depôt dinghy back to Depôt. Rest of day about house painting. Boxing during day. Barometer 29.5 {Tweed [dog] N.B.G. [no bloody good]}
- Tuesday*
11 October Miserable day. E'ly wind & drizzle all day. Cold. Mended boots. Beginning to look for boat. !!!!!!!!!!!!!????*:*;;; Barometer 29.48.
- Wednesday*
12 October Same as yesterday; but a little worse. E'ly stronger & colder. Fourth consec. day of E. weather. Barometer 29.6.
- Thursday*
13 October Same as yesterday. Bitter E'ly all day. Miserable day out of doors. Then omenably [sic] steady glass & E'ly wind. Now fifth day of such weather. Barometer 29.54.
- Friday*
14 October Same as yesterday!!! Strong E'ly; very cold wind. At times drizzle. Miserable weather. "6" days E'ly. Barometer 29.64.

- Saturday*
15 October Good day. E'ly wind all day with sunshine. Best day this month. I painted house to-day. O.K. Send along the boat. Also dried remainder of piece wool. Barometer 29.8. {IV.}
- Sunday*
16 October Grand day. Sunshine. Cloudless sky: !! E'ly wind. Great spell weather. Paul & Jack made trip to N.E. Harbour. Took stroll to Col scrub; set fires; went up later & put it out; fence in danger. Afternoon "burnt off" at Cave Rocks. Good burn. Grand day out in sun. Getting short of tank water!!!! Barometer 29.58. {V.}
- Monday*
17 October Still E'ly all day. Rain forenoon afternoon finer. Evening drizzle. Cold wind. I mustered Beeman & killed sheep for house; also completed work at yards. Albatrosses in harbour. Barometer 29.18.
- Tuesday*
18 October A grand day after rain early forenoon & overnight. E'ly wind all day. Sunshine. Heavy fog towards evening. Completed painting of house & cleaned out water tables. Quiet day. Now "10" days E'ly. Barometer 29.24. {VI.}
- Wednesday*
19 October Forenoon brilliant sunshine. Afternoon fog (heavy) mist & drizzle. We ("5") went to Bushy Pt.; two good loads of firewood. Mac discovered bush penguin sitting on "2" eggs. Eight chickens hatched to-day. Barometer 29.42. {8 Chicks.}
- Thursday*
20 October Brilliant forenoon; sunshine; afternoon heavy fog, mist & light drizzle. N.N.W. wind. Evening calm. Mustered Beeman; culled for house; Paul put remainder of wethers to run. Evening killed wether for house. Beeman ready for rams. Chickens O.K. Barometer 29.68.
- Friday*
21 October Cold N'ly all day; dull. Mist on tops. Evening drizzle. I put in part of day bundling firewood at Head of Bay. Mac saw a leopard at Head of Bay this afternoon. Barometer 29.18.
- Saturday*
22 October Steady rain until mid-afternoon. rest of day fine; evening showery. Pressed three bales of wool. I did washing later. A sea lion in N.Col. paddock to-night. Fully "300" yds from sea. Barometer 28.6.
- Sunday*
23 October Back to Winter.! Snow on tops. Bitter S.W. wind all day with snow & hail showers. Miserable day. Went as far as Cave Rocks in afternoon. Barometer 28.8. Snow.
- Monday*
24 October Heavy rain overnight. Day bitterly cold with cold rain showers. Labour Day to-day. Made raid on Depôt for fowl feed; (biscuits). Albatrosses in harbour to-day. Wind S.W. Barometer 29.28.
- Tuesday*
25 October Dull morning. Later heavy mist to water's edge. Afternoon drizzle. I brought in sheep from S.Col.; killed one for fowl feed. Jack & Mac boated wood & stakes from Beeman. Paul shot a gander to-day. Two geese sitting. Barometer 29.54.
- Wednesday*
26 October Misty early. Then steady rain until 3 pm. Dull. Wind N.W. to W. Paul & I moored punt before breakfast. All at shed to-day; preparing for shearing. Made pen gates also extended shearing board. Barometer 29.52.

- Thursday*
27 October Heavy mist with steady drizzle all day. Evening cleared; heavy showers; cold N. to N.W. wind. Work was completed at shed to-day. All O.K. for shearing; also set & ground shears. Set another hen. Barometer 28.78. {Set hen 12 eggs.}
- Friday*
28 October Cold day. showery. W'yly. wind. Afternoon we mustered N.Col scrub. Drove home 7 pm. Evening Paul killed sheep for house. Barometer 29.12. {Commenced muster.}
- Saturday*
29 October Boisterous day. Cold W'yly; showers after rain overnight. Shearing: cut out 6 pm: 177 sheep. Barometer 28.74.
- Sunday*
30 October Very cold day. No shearing weather. W'yly wind, sharp rain & hail showers. Strong wind. I turned sheep to N.Col paddock. Barometer 28.56.
- Monday*
31 October Awful day. Glimpses of sun with snow & hail showers. Wind from W. & S'yly. Pressed "2" bales. I later made a new lid for flour bin. Barometer 28.1.
- Tuesday*
1 November Island under snow!!!! Two inches about house. Very nice!!! Bitterly cold S'yly with heavy snow showers. I boated wood from Bay. Barometer 28.6.
- Wednesday*
2 November Out of ink!! Cold day; no snow; little thaw; glass rising. I brought in sheep from N.Col. paddock. Sheep have all weathered "it" no casualties. Paul killed wether for house. Odd jobs. Looking for boat? Barometer 28.8.
- Thursday*
3 November Terrible day. Strong E'yly with heavy rain!! Very miserable. Punt dragged; Paul & I launched boat & put down extra mooring. Got wet thru. in process. Out of firewood. Carried some from N.Col. paddock. Things only "middling". Barometer 28.76.
- Friday*
4 November Cold day; dull; light E'yly; no rain. Boated two loads firewood from Beeman; & one load dry wood from Head of Bay. Set for wood. If fine tomorrow; another muster. Barometer 29.34.
- Saturday*
5 November Heavy rain overnight. Forenoon mustered Azimuth valley (N.Col.) Mobbed up in dense fog. Drove to Depôt. Afternoon brought in shorn sheep. docked lambs & turned out to run. Evening mist & drizzle. Barometer 29.06.
- Sunday*
6 November Terrible weather. Steady flood rain from early evening last night continuing until 4 pm to-day. Everything soaking. Now dense fog & drizzle. Day of Rest. Barometer 28.28.
- Monday*
7 November Steady rain all night until 10 am. Remainder of day showery; S'yly wind. Sun at times. Evening shedded up sheep (wet). Killed wether for house. Odd jobs at shed. Barometer 28.5.
- Tuesday*
8 November Showers overnight. Sheep too wet to shear; to Depôt Paddock. Showery forenoon. Afternoon fine sunshine. Mustered remainder N.Col. Drove to Garden Creek. Home 7 pm. Paul shedded up & killed 3 sheep for dogs. Barometer 28.58.

- Wednesday*
9 November Fine day. Calm. Sunshine. Shore 140, docked & turned out to N.Col. Pressed wool. Brought in woollies from Garden Creek. Evening shedded up. One sheep lambded in shed. Evening carried albatross (caught in S.Col. fence) to beach. Took to water after Bill took photos of him on lawn. Barometer 28.8. {Set hen 11 eggs.}
- Thursday*
10 November Rain overnight. A steady heavy rain all day with cold W'ly. Cleared 3 pm. Now improving. Shore 103, pressed "3" bales & killed wether for house. Holding sheep trusting the good day tomorrow. Barometer 28.62.
- Friday*
11 November Grand day. Sunshine. Light S'ly. Boated 10 Rams Beeman, docked lambs & mustered S.Col. Lost about "50" sheep. Home 6.30 pm. Shedded up. Barometer 28.84.
- Saturday*
12 November Grand day. light S.W. with sunshine turning to heavy mist & rain evening. Sheep too wet to shear. Turned out to Garden Creek. Odd jobs; picked piece wool. Ground shears. Afternoon Mac & I made repairs to Beeman fence. Barometer 29.02.
- Sunday*
13 November Miserable day. Steady rain all day. Still continuing. Light N.W. wind. Barometer 28.7.
- Monday*
14 November Strong W'ly wind. Cold. Sunshine forenoon, afternoon dull. Mac & I made another muster @ S.Col. Over 50 sheep. Drove to Garden Creek. Barometer 29.04.
- Tuesday*
15 November No boat yet? A rough night. N'ly wind. Fog, at times drizzle. Very cold forenoon. Shearing from 6 am. Shore 258. Docked lambs. Shorn sheep to N.Col. Evening I killed wether for house. Food reduced almost to flour, sugar & mutton!!!! Barometer 28.62.
- Wednesday*
16 November Foggy day. W'ly wind. Glimpses of sun. Light drizzle at times. Pressed "3" bales, stored wood. Brought forward sheep from Garden Creek ("58" woollies). Evening shedded up. Have been on Island two years today. No boat yet. Barometer 29.16.
- Thursday*
17 November Very rough night & morning. Heavy rain & N.W. gale, afternoon fine with strong wind. Forenoon I turned out sheep from N.Col. Afternoon shore "58". Wethers for boat! & rams to Depôt paddock. Barometer 28.58.
- Friday*
18 November More weather; but no boat yet? Am afraid the owners of this outfit have forgotten they left men here. Boat now "8" months overdue. Terrible day, after heavy rain overnight. Bitter S'ly gale with sleet & rain showers. Carried firewood from N.Col paddock. Barometer 29.
- Saturday*
19 November Dull morning. Jack, Mac & I boated rams to Beeman bringing back firewood. Paul killed sheep for house & dogs. High water she came away from N.E. with gale & torrential rain. Terrible afternoon. Still continuing. No boat yet?!?!?????;* Barometer 28.52.
- Sunday*
20 November Rain overnight. Rotten day. Gale from W'ly all day; a bitter wind. Miserable day out. Sunshine at times. No boat yet. Barometer 28.46.

Monday
21 November Weather; awful; worse than mid Winter. Gale from W'ly; bitterly cold, snow & hail showers. No boat yet? But "Hope springs eternal". Now "300" days since boat was here. Barometer 28.96. {Snow.}

Tuesday
22 November Dubious day. Rain showers forenoon. Thick fog all day. Miserable. No boat yet. Barometer 29.16.

Wednesday
23 November Same old tale. thick fog; light drizzle at times. Cold N.N.W. wind. No muster; & no boat. Barometer 29.12.

Thursday
24 November Dreary day. Heavy fog; mist & drizzle. Calm & mild. Light E'ly towards evening with steady drizzle. I boated wood from Head of Bay in afternoon. No boat yet. Barometer 29.42.

Friday
25 November Heavy fog on hills. No muster. I boated ram to Beeman; brought in sheep from Garden Creek; killed two for house (both "rejected") & one for dogs. The "Rest" boated firewood from Bushy Pt. Grand evening; calm; mild; heavy fog. Paul went fishing. catch "7". Barometer 29.52. High.

Saturday
26 November Beautiful day. Sunshine. Light N'ly. Mustered home face Filholl; drove to Depôt paddock. Home 3 pm. Good muster. Barometer 29.52.

Sunday
27 November Good day. Sunshine & fog. Light N'ly & slight rain at times. Evening shedded up 220 sheep. Barometer 29.58.

Monday
28 November Commenced shearing 8.30 am. The "Karamu" dropped anchor @ 10 am. Wet day; N.E. wind. Brought ashore stores, new men & dogs. We packed up. Left Island 9 pm.

First sight of N.Z. Dec. 1st after a good trip direct from Island. Port Chalmers 10 am.

Now I am back in N.Z. the stunt* is over & the clock is wound up. Let us forget about it.

* Used among New Zealanders at that time in the sense of 'battle' or 'struggle', rather than a 'performance' - Ed.

Suggestions - Winter

Continuation Peaks Fence.
Renovation back fences to yards.
Repairs break fence Back of Duma
Repairs break fence Garden Creek
Repairs break fence Cave Rocks (Honey Beach)
Repairs Race at yards & new gates for same. [Struck out]
Tarring of race at Shipping wharf.
White washing inside shed
Tarring back wall of same. [Struck out]
Re-staking of fences (various).
Paris track.
Gates as req'd. [Struck out]
Gratings

Account

Date (As from 1st Apl. 1920)

23.4.20	1/2 doz. pkt cigarette papers
26.5.20	1 tin "3" Castles tobacco
29.6.20	2 pkts. "3" Castles cigarettes.
4.9.20	1 packet matches.
14.7.20	1 tin "3" castles tobacco
3.9.20	3 pkts. cigarettes
12.9.20	1 tin "3" castles tobacco
14.10.20	1 tin "3" castles tobacco
12.11.20	1 tin "3" castles tobacco
do	1 pkt. matches
30.11.20	1 Tin Tobacco
14.12.20	2 do
15.1.20	1 do
1.2.21	6 Pkt. Cigarette Papers
4.2.21	1 Tin Tobacco
7.2.21	4 do
10.3.21	1 do
19.3.21	6 pkt cigarettes
1.4.21	2 tin tobacco
17.4.21	4 do
21.5.21	1 pkt matches
11.5.21	4 Tobacco
	6 Pkt Cig.
19.5.21	6 Pkt. papers
21.6.21	4 tobacco
8.7.21	2 pks matches
27.7.21	6 pkt. cig.
do	4 tins tobacco
19.9.21	4 tins tobacco
22.10.21	4 tins tobacco
26.11.21	4 tins tobacco
	6 papers

Tally

19.4.20	9	N.W. Bay
13.5.20	12	Heads (Finger Post)
13.6.20	2	N.W. Bay
14.7.20	5	Duma
19.7.20	1	S.E. Harbour
22.7.20	5	Sth. Point.
23.7.20	4	Erebus I
24.7.20	1	Nth. Col.
4.8.20	7	Heads (Finger Post)
5.8.20	2	Hole of Paris
6.8.20	2	Monumental H'd
31.8.20	2	Duma
3.9.20	2	Sth. Pt.
Total	54	

Continued

17.4.21	1	Hole of Paris
21.4.21	1	N.W.B.
23.4.21	4	S.E. Harbour
do	7	Sth. Point.
26.4.21	9	Erebus I.
22.5.21	1	Beeman
3.6.21	6	Duma
17.6.21	3	Mon. Head.
19.6.21	2	Erebus I
19.6.21	14	Erebus II Home 8.45 pm
23.6.21	1	N.Col.
24.8.21	2	Duma
25.8.21	5	Finger Post
26.8.21	2	Paris via N.W. Bay
17.9.21	1	Capstan Bay
do	5	Paris via N.W. Bay
18.9.21	1	Mon. Head
do	1	Square Hill.
do	2	S.E. Harbour
Forward	68	
19.9.21	15	Erebus II
Total	83	
Per P. McQ	1	
	84	

2 Sth.

[Miscellaneous end-paper notes]

Int £5-17

10/- week shearing bonus

£355 app.

2326 sheep shorn 1.1.1921

Bread 14.6.21

Kerosene 2.5.21

Trilby to Scott 1st serve 10.8.20 21st Oct (7 pups)

Clyde to Dot 1st serve 2.9.20 Oct 31st (7 pups)

Glen to Fey 6.10.21 & 8.10.21 & 11.10.21 Due 9-10.12.21

Glen to Scott 15.4.21 due time 18th Scott deceased 15.5.21 Shot as
N.B.G. [no bloody good]

Clyde in Home Paddock 2nd time. Clyde at Beeman evening of
22.4.21.

Facilities were quite
primitive and the
most mundane tasks
were often difficult.
Photo by Alexander
"Sandy" Robertson.



Life on Campbell Island

Conon Fraser

Weather and farming dominated life on Campbell Island, with the weather taking precedence. Good days were rare, and mustering in the shearing season and general farm work usually went on every day that was fine enough or calm enough or clear enough of rain, sleet, snow, mist or fog, irrespective of whether it was Sunday, which was spasmodically observed, or public holidays.

There were seven or possibly eight men working the island's only farm in Alfred Austin's first five months, but this number was reduced to only four after the first changeover, when Albert Metzger, whose parents Austin had enjoyed a musical evening with at Bluff on the voyage down,¹ replaced Andrew Nicholson as manager (Timms 1978: 67). For the final ten months, when Austin himself was manager, there were five of them (see Appendix 1).

It was a busy life at the Tucker Cove farmhouse, and the first year of the diary gives little indication of the lethargic depression now known as 'island sickness' which can be experienced by small groups cut off for long periods from civilisation. Unlike the monotony of the coast watchers' routine some twenty years later, there was always something to be done.

A constant chore, often involving the use of a rowboat, was the gathering and chopping of firewood. This came from the *Dracophyllum* scrub, which grew several metres high in sheltered parts of the island, such as the inlets of Perseverance Harbour. (The island's only tree as such is a climate-stunted sitka spruce, planted soon after the turn of the century, which still survives at Camp Cove.) The men's supply of coal was limited and strictly for the cooking range, for, as Austin observed while scavenging for old bricks during the final long frustrating wait for the overdue relief ship: *We hope to brick in our range one of these days. It will help to save our coal; if we have to wait until November; we will have none too much of that commodity!*²

Besides the general routine of laundry and housework, the farm workers had to be jacks of all trades, tackling jobs as diverse as wallpapering,³ darning socks (*How thrilling*),⁴ bricklaying,⁵ plastering,⁶ tarring and painting the dinghy,⁷ and repairing the wharf.⁸ Wet weather and rough going were heavy on footwear, and Austin became adept as a cobbler of a variety of boots and shoes: *Found time to make a pair of 'clogs' (very popular here & handy too);*⁹ *Mended a pair of boots (another pair);*¹⁰ and on a Sunday afternoon, with the relief ship expected, *mended a pair of 'go ashore' shoes for Albert.*¹¹ Robby, Austin's first room-mate and cobbler, *cut my hair after tea. On the lawn too! Made a good job of*

it!¹² Not long after, Austin returned the favour: *I cut Robby's hair. My first attempt in that direction: was much relieved to learn he was satisfied.*¹³ The two of them made cabinets for their gramophone records – *rather a rough job, but will serve the purpose*¹⁴ – and for their lamps.¹⁵

Quite apart from work in the shearing shed, fencing and yards, there were always improvements to be made round the homestead, from the aesthetic – *after dinner Bill Albert & I rowed to Terror Pt., where we collected some shrubs for transplanting around house. A beautifying society!*¹⁶ – to the essential: *Spent an hour before dinner in wiring down house, a precaution that is necessary in Winter on account of gales (it would be unfortunate if house blew away!!).*¹⁷ Water tables had to be kept clear¹⁸ and stones carted for the yard.¹⁹ Items such as shelves, a coal scuttle and boot scraper were made,²⁰ and a new chimney was built for the sitting room – *a much needed comfort for our winter months. It proved an O.K. job. The 'unveiling' ceremony has been arranged for a later date. 'If you would see our monument look around you!*²¹

Occasionally, a major task, like the painting of the house²² would take up considerable time. One such project followed the wrecking of one of their three row-boats, *Hilda*, which had been left on the beach at the start of a muster, to bring back later. She had been caught by one of the sudden violent squalls, or williwaws, which funnel down the harbour, and had been tossed upside down on the beach. *A total wreck! Minus some planks etc. Left her there: will command our attention later. Quite a disaster.*²³ It was a week or so before they were able to pull her further up the beach clear of tides. She was towed home ten days later. On 14 May 1920, for a 'sighter' [to begin with] they broke into the castaway depot to borrow its emergency boat while *Hilda* was undergoing repairs. Mention of this work is made throughout May, and presumably it continued as time allowed until further mentions in August. It was not until 9 September 1820 that Austin comments: *By the way, the boat that we have repaired has undergone a change of name. Formerly she was the 'Hilda' but is now known as the 'Uno'! That is quite a joke.*

Some jobs were more in the nature of pastimes taken on for Austin's own satisfaction. Several times he mentions helping the cook: making a bread trough,²⁴ taking a *lesson in baking!!!*²⁵ and subsequently making bread,²⁶ and baking.²⁷ One Sunday, after dinner, he *cut some rails in readiness for a rustic fence that I am going to build in my spare time (along the edge of the lawn). It should look quite alright when I have it finished.*²⁸ A month later he *rowed dingby to Terror Pt., bringing home a load of rails to complete my rustic fence. I have made quite a few references to that fence. Anyone reading that would no doubt, have reason to imagine it as something wonderful.*²⁹

Work and recreation like hunting were often combined while walking round the island to keep an eye on the stock. On 1 April 1920 the men went to round up cattle at Capstan Bay*, a small bay within Northwest Bay, where they tried to shoot one of the old bulls, but *our .22 had no effect. I hit him twice; but he did not seem concerned.* A few days later they returned to try again. There was *plenty of excitement. Took the old "Martini" [rifle, possibly early .450 version] with us & also the pea rifle[.22 rifle]. Had only one cartridge, which Bill Ashton fired to no advantage: the bull lives: perhaps a charmed life: however we "warmed" him up with a few rounds from the .22. Home, disappointed 3 pm.*³⁰ The third time, on 29 October, they were successful: *To-day we landed the mustard! We brought home the hide and some "steak" for our dogs.*

Seals and other marine mammals, along with sheep in poor condition, were regularly killed for dog tucker; but leopard seals, seals, sea lions and birds were also shot for sport: *After tea shot one or two sea hawks [skua] from our front verandab³¹; andtook the gun to Garden Creek. Had four shots: four hawks: unerring shots!.... Omitted to say also shot a sbag from the wharf. Death to the birds!³²* Another time, while chopping wood, they espied a sea elephant making up-harbour. *He made to head of Bay. We took our rifles and put a few "22's" into him; but he made off. We next saw him off Shipping wharf. Launched dingby & made after him taking the "Snider" rifle with us. Paul shot him & we took him in tow; but he came to life again, so we had to cast off, as there was danger of him upsetting the boat. Put two more shots into him; but he sank, so we came home disappointed. He was about 15 ft long & covered with scars. An exciting event.*³³ A similar incident is described in hunting a leopard seal.³⁴

Austin was impressed by the variety of wildlife, on one occasion watching two pug seals at Capstan Bay... also two sea lions. *Very reluctant to leave the beach. We merely watched the lions for a while. They are very interesting animals. It would be a feast for any camera fiend.*³⁵ Several references are made to photography and an interest in wildlife as hobbies,³⁶ the two sometimes combining: *Evening carried albatross (caught in S.Col. fence) to beach. Took to water after Bill took photos of him on lawn.*³⁷ Photographs were also taken of shearing,³⁸ and mustering.³⁹ They did their own developing.⁴⁰

Not surprisingly, penguins had a special fascination: *I caught a "king" penguin on the beach. They make good pets; easy to tame. In*

*Timms (1978) refers to it first as Capstan Cove, but in his end notes points out that it is 'Now known as Windlass Bay'. Also, on page 62, he tells of 'the capstan mouldering on the beach at Windlass Bay'. It is actually a windlass that was mouldering, not a capstan. Capstans are vertical, whereas windlasses, as positioned above water wells, are horizontal.

*meantime we have assigned him a spare pen in the woolshed. The following day: Had great fun feeding our penguin tonight!*⁴¹ By the end of the month it had finished moulting and was looking good, but *we let our penguin go today. He had not, seemingly, been well of late, so we thought it a shame to keep him, under the cirrs. Were sorry to lose him.*⁴² A few months later an Adele penguin they were keeping in the shed had a fight with their geese, described as *a good "go"*.⁴³

One of the two replacement men to arrive in April 1920 was Paul McQuarrie, who, after his first day mustering, Austin thought *a bit tired (a bit "soft" yet I suppose)*.⁴⁴ Ironically, Paul proved to be an ex-heavyweight boxing champion of New Zealand. The first 'lesson' he gave Austin in the woolshed some weeks later was the first of many friendly sparring bouts.⁴⁵ Austin clearly enjoyed these, in spite of the hazards: *Boxing after tea. Had my nose knocked about, so will have to have a spell until it heals.*⁴⁶ It was almost a month before he was ready to have *a "spar" after tea & later a game of quoits.*⁴⁷

At first, music played an important part in recreation & leisure. On the voyage down there was the *very decent musical evening*¹ with Albert Metzger's parents. A week after arriving, 23 November 1919, was a Sunday, *so played a few hymns on the cornet!*⁴⁸ A few days later rain closed in, and he notes: *Nothing doing: wound the phonograph for an hour & then did some swot. Have done very little cornet playing since I came down here.*

Apart from brief references such as: *Tuesday 17 February. Rain (heavy) all day... Put in day at cards, reading & also a little music,* the greater part of the diary makes few further references to the reading, music and swot referred to in the early months;⁴⁹ although half way through his time on the island he notes: *The main spring of our gramophone broke the other night. Fortunately we had a spare one which Albert has fitted, so we shall not be deprived of our music.*⁵⁰

It seems that, particularly during the first year, the men got on well together. Soon after arriving, Austin writes that *Joe, a Main Body man [first large contingent of NZ Expeditionary Force, WWI], is entertaining the fellows in the sitting room with incidents of his four years' service, so will join them.*⁵¹ One evening, after mustering, they had *a regular picnic down barbour. Boiled the "billy" & all.*⁵² Typical of several outings is that of 13 June 1920: *Did not observe Sunday today; but after breakfast set out for N.W. Bay via Col.... Raced Albert 100 yds sprint on the sand; was beaten by 2 yds! Paul badly wrenched his ankle but was able to make home, which we reached at 5 pm. Paul's bad ankle means a cessation to boxing lessons for some time.*

Fishing⁵³ and floundering⁵⁴ were popular pastimes, and several interesting references are made to prospecting for minerals: *Robby and I went over to the Cave Rocks to dig rubies. Washed quite a number:*

*they are of little commercial value being too soft to cut.*⁵⁵ Timms (1978: 40) suggests they were probably zircons, reddish-brown semi-precious gemstones found in igneous rocks. On another occasion, *Jack Bill & I went to Capstan Bay where Jack had a "prospect" for gold in the creek there; did not raise a colour.*⁵⁶ Austin also refers to picking up specimens of coal in a slip above the beach near Mt Paris.⁵⁷

With the possible exception of Bill Fleck, the cook, who was unwell more often than the others,⁵⁸ they were all young and fit, and generally enjoyed good health apart from the occasional cold or day off sick, where anything worse in such isolation could have proved extremely serious. Towards the end of their stay, there were a few references to feeling unwell,⁵⁹ which might have indicated incipient scurvy, as their vegetables and other food supplies had long since run out or become unusable. Accidents were few: early on Austin *badly wrenched that "football" ankle of mine;*⁶⁰ and on Sunday 25 July 1920 he doctored his *foot, a cut in which thru inattention has become poisoned.* But generally they were fortunate.

Austin makes several references to the Island's interesting history, although his entries are not always accurate. A few days after arriving he writes: *This Island was first discovered by the French & consequently places here bear French names.*⁶¹ Campbell Island was in fact discovered by Captain Hasselburgh of Sydney in 1810, and it was not until 1874 that a French scientific expedition used the island to observe the Transit of Venus. French place names would soon become familiar to Austin from mustering - Mts Dumas, Faye and Paris - and in exploring the island: *In the afternoon Joe & I took the gun and went for a stroll over to the Frenchman's grave. ... about a mile from the house. You can still trace the place where they had their camp.*⁶² The Frenchman in question was not a midshipman, but Duris, a technician, who died of typhoid. His grave, which has been lost for some seventy years now, was on the promontory at Garden Cove, marked by a wrought iron cross.

Another memorial Austin mentions was that of *the "Three Brothers", a grave of three unknown castaways about a 1/2 mile from the homestead. some years ago a cairn was erected there by the men of the station & naturally we look after the graves.*⁶³

In January 1921, at Terror Point, *Paul found an old notice board above the beach, relating to some seeds planted there in "1899" by crew of the "Southern Cross" (an Antarctic expedition of that date). Rather an interesting relic. As we could see no sign of the plants, we brought home the sign board. We shall preserve it at home here.*⁶⁴

Twice, while mustering in March 1920, Austin refers to a finger post, which was one of several signposts to guide shipwrecked sailors to the castaway depot with its emergency food, clothing, and boat.⁶⁵ He

mentions the New Zealand Government castaway depots several times, firstly on seeing the *Hinemoa* at anchor while servicing depots as they passed the Auckland Islands during the voyage down,⁶⁶ and then on taking some spare books from the farmhouse to the depot with Robby soon after their arrival.⁶⁷ But mostly the Campbell Island depot was used for what could be 'raided' from it: its boat, borrowed while their own was undergoing repairs,⁶⁸ and tea, biscuits and provisions, as their supplies ran out while they waited for the relief ship in the final year.⁶⁸

It must have been a difficult time, as they had no communication with New Zealand or contact with Mathewson and Murray, the owners of the farm up in Dunedin, who had taken over the island lease from Captain Tucker. Austin's sense of isolation was intensified by anxiety and the interminable wait for the relief ship: on Saturday 1 October 1821 he writes: *A wet miserable day to herald in new month; which I hope is my last in this outfit.*

Other than those making the round of the castaway depots on the subantarctic islands, no ships ever called, and New Zealand must have seemed very remote. When Austin first arrived, he records that *the three chaps who have been here for the winter, were pleased to see us. Were very anxious to know whether Prohibition had been carried in the Dominion as they called NZ down here.*⁷⁰ He felt a similar emotion during the first changeover of men on 11 April 1920, after he had been on the island five months: *excitement ran, shall we say "high". They received their mail, & we were naturally pleased to have news from N.Z. Two men (2nd mate & Joe) came ashore & we had an "evening". Took them aboard after mid-night.*⁷¹ Three days later the S.S. *Stella* sailed, and *We saw last of boat at dusk. Exit communication for another six months.*

That six months would prove to be nine - long past the early months of picking over potatoes to make them go further⁷² - although on one occasion the sorting was done simply for something to do.⁷³ On 1 December 1920 Austin records looking for the overdue boat. Ten days later: *we have given up hope of seeing the boat this year.*⁷⁴ The S.S. *Tutanekai* did not arrive until 24 January 1921. Once again it was the briefest link with the outside world, with all too little time for relaxation: *Party came ashore including ladies; a merry party. Spent day baling wool, loading, taking off stores, & killing sheep for boat. Spent evening on board. [Next day] Boat left at 1.15 pm. Albert going up; I have been left in charge; we have also two new men. Am staying on until March. {!!}*

This time, the two months expected dragged out to ten. Albert Metzger, who had gone on holiday, expecting to return in March, never did come back (Kerr 1976: 91). Austin makes frequent comments on the appalling weather and references to the non-appearance of the boat, beginning goodnaturedly when it was only a few days overdue: *Barbered Bill's*

*bair (a "boat" trim be called it). We are now anxiously looking for that boat.*⁷⁵ 15 April 1921: *Getting "windy" about non-arrival of that boat!!!!* By 6 May 1921, after further entries on the subject, his comments have become increasingly exasperated: *Given up hope of seeing boat; dissatisfaction rife; & justly so.*

After six months, the effect of atrocious weather and frustration at being abandoned combine: *Terrible day. Worst of my experience. Very heavy rain & thunder overnight. Smoking [williwaws tearing the surface off the barbour] from S'ly all day with snow & hail showers. Terribly cold. Am sure sheep have not been dry for "5" weeks. Now some five weeks since we had a decent day. Don't you think one would be tired of it (especially as we expected to be in N.Z. three months ago). That was the condition under which we stopped on.*⁷⁶

Two more months passed. A long entry on Sunday 11 September 1921 contains a summary of their situation: *Now a word about our stores. We had vegetables for "6" weeks only. Have forgotten what they are like . We are also out of coffee, cocoa, jam etc. Milk will last a few days. Butter is not fit to eat (we can use it for baking yet) tea will not see this month out. So much for the essentials; of course other things we have long since forgotten about. Also the boat is nearly six months overdue. One can understand that all these things do not make for best of feeling about the place. Hope "Day of Deliverance" will soon dawn.*

Everyone's morale must have been affected, and Austin, as manager now, would have felt the burden most. No doubt he also missed the leadership and companionship of Albert Metzger, who in April 1920 had succeeded Robby as his room mate.⁷⁷ There must have been a temptation for the men to turn to drink; however, it is notable that apart from the early allusion to Prohibition,⁷⁰ and mention of an "evening" during the *Stella's* visit,⁷⁷ no direct and little indirect reference is made to alcohol.

The occasion of Austin's birthday on 21 April 1921 passed with the briefest comment - { *"My birthday" "23".* } - and in general his second year's entries lack the buoyancy of those of the first, although the diary does retain a good deal of its earlier enthusiasm, as in his appreciation of the Southern Lights,⁷⁸ and humour, as in his comments on the year's appalling weather.⁷⁹ And he still finds interest in life on the island. Late on, in August 1921, he made his first visit to the Cooks' old whaling base: *First time I have been to the huts since I came here.Had a good look about; four buildings in O.K order; took a mental inventory of material there inc. some "250" casks. An interesting day.*⁸⁰ Later still, on 9 October 1921, he climbed to the summit of Mt Honey with Jack and Bill Fleck, where, for posterity, they *left names in bottle on top.*

October 1921 brings numerous references to the non-arrival of the boat, among them: *Tuesday 11 October Beginning to look for boat. !!!!!!!!!*:*;;; Tuesday 15 November No boat yet?... Food reduced almost to flour, sugar & mutton!!!! Wednesday 16 November Have been on Island two years to-day. No boat yet. Friday 18 November More weather; but no boat yet? Am afraid the owners of this outfit have forgotten they left men here. Boat now "8" months overdue. Monday 21 November No boat yet? But "Hope springs eternal". Now "300" days since boat was here.*

And then at last, with Austin giving no explanation for the delay, on Monday 28 November 1921, *The "Karamu" dropped anchor @ 10 am.... Brought ashore stores, new men & dogs. We packed up. Left Island 9 pm.*

One can imagine Alfred Austin's feelings at his first sight of New Zealand on 1 December 1921, after two years and 21 days away. Life on Campbell Island had been the experience of a lifetime, with both highs and lows, and unfortunately ending on a low. But now it was over. *Now I am back in N.Z. the stunt is over & the clock is wound up. Let us forget about it.*

References

The diary

¹12 Nov 19 ²16 Apr 21 ³6, 18 & 31 Oct 20, 1 & 29 Sep 21 ⁴1 Mar 20 ⁵22 Apr 21 ⁶23, 26 Apr 21 ⁷2 & 3 Aug 21 ⁸26 Jul 21 ⁹25 Mar 20 ¹⁰5 Apr 20 ¹¹4 Jul 20 ¹²20 Nov 19 ¹³11 Dec 19 ¹⁴21 Nov 19 ¹⁵27 Dec 19 ¹⁶20 Jun 20 ¹⁷30 Apr 20 ¹⁸9 Feb & 27 Aug 20, 18 Oct 21 ¹⁹3 Jun 20 ²⁰6 & 27 Jun 20 ²¹21 & 23 Apr 20 ²²18 Oct 21 ²³24 Apr 20 ²⁴22 Feb 21 ²⁵5 Jul 21 ²⁶10 Jul 21 ²⁷9 Aug 21 ²⁸18 Jul 20 ²⁹1, 15 & 22 Aug 20 ³⁰6 Apr 20 ³¹23 Nov 19 ³²24 Dec 19 ³³21 Sep 20 ³⁴25 Jun 20 ³⁵13 Jun 20 ³⁶20 Dec 19, 1 Jan & 13 Jun 20, 3 Apr 21 ³⁷9 Nov 21 ³⁸16 Jan 20 ³⁹19 & 20 Dec 19 ⁴⁰18 Sep 20 ⁴¹3 Feb 20 ⁴²15 Mar 20 ⁴³12 & 17 Nov 20 ⁴⁴15 Apr 20 ⁴⁵11 Jul 20, 8 Sep 20, 1 Jul 21, etc. ⁴⁶20 Sep 20 ⁴⁷9, 10, & 17 Oct 20 ⁴⁸23 Nov 19 ⁴⁹21 Nov & 5 Dec 19 ⁵⁰7 Sep 20 ⁵¹21 Nov 19 ⁵²10 Mar 20 ⁵³20 Aug 20, 28 Oct 20, 10 Oct & 25 Nov 21 ⁵⁴8 May 20, 26 Sep 20, 28 Oct 20 ⁵⁵14 Dec 19, 13 Feb 21 ⁵⁶3 Apr 21 ⁵⁷5 Aug 20 ⁵⁸28 Dec 19, 20 Sep 20, 4 Feb 21, 18,22,24 Jun 21, 20 Sep 21, 3 Oct 21 ⁵⁹8 & 28 Sep 21, 3 Nov 21 ⁶⁰29 Nov 19 ⁶¹16 Nov 19 ⁶²24 Nov 19 ⁶³21 Nov 19 ⁶⁴10 Jan 21 ⁶⁵9 and 21 Mar 20 ⁶⁶15 Nov 19 ⁶⁷19 Nov 19 ⁶⁸14 May 20 ⁶⁹16 Jan & 21 Jun 21, 2 & 24 Oct 21 ⁷⁰16 Nov 19 ⁷¹12 Apr 20 ⁷²16 Jun 20 ⁷³23 Feb 20 ⁷⁴10 Dec 20 ⁷⁵30 Mar 21 ⁷⁶22 Jul 21 ⁷⁷11-14 Apr 20 ⁷⁸12 May, 3 Sep & 9 Oct 21 ⁷⁹12,15 Jul 21 ⁸⁰18 Aug 21

Other sources

Kerr, I.S. 1976: Campbell Island; a history. Reed, Wellington.

Kerr, I.S.; Judd, N. (eds) 1978: Marlborough whalers at Campbell Island 1909-1916. A narrative based on the recollections of J. Timms. Department of Lands and Survey, Wellington.

Farming operations on Campbell Island

Conon Fraser

Farming had been a struggle on Campbell Island from the beginning, due to the island's remoteness from New Zealand across a storm-swept ocean, the unreliability and high cost of shipping, the problem of finding shepherds and shearers prepared to work in isolation, and difficult economic times.

To encourage permanent occupation and protection of its most southerly territories, the Government first offered pastoral leases on both the Auckland Islands and Campbell Island back in 1894. The Campbell Island lease, the most distant but the most promising, was taken up by James Gordon of Gisborne, who went down to the island the following year with three men, taking building supplies and the first 400 sheep. But he had a large family to care for back home, and in 1900 passed his lease to Captain Henry Tucker, also of Gisborne, although he agreed to stay on as farm manager for Tucker's first two years.

Because of the difficulty of getting anyone to stay for more than a year at a time, a former Shetland Islander suggested to Tucker that he advertise in the Shetlands for men accustomed to isolated conditions. Four responded (Kerr 1976: 91). Two of them, Andrew Nicholson and William Manson, would be associated with Campbell Island on and off for almost 16 years, and were there for Austin's first five months, when Nicholson was farm manager.

After a few years Tucker made an agreement with five whalers from Tory Channel in Marlborough to help with the shearing. From the year they established a whaling base on the island in 1909, the whalers took over the management of the farm for Tucker until 1916 (Timms 1978: 9-10). Over this period, land, stock and buildings deteriorated, and in 1916, to add to Tucker's problems, all the whalers enlisted for the World War (Timms 1978: 57). Tucker now sold his lease to D. Murray and J.A. Mathewson of Dunedin, who formed the Campbell Island Company, and were Austin's employers when he arrived there to be immediately involved in the activity of the 1919-1920 shearing season.

Austin's first muster took place the day after the boat that had brought him left the island. His mind was no doubt full of new impressions, and he had had little time to recover from the work involved in the *Stella's* departure. He was *introduced to the two dogs I am to work here, viz Keilly & Mac. (an Irish & Scotchman.) What if they argue on Home Rule! Set out for Square Hill, which took four of us until 3 pm. to muster, getting about 130 ewes including some treble fleeces which we*

shore when we mobbed up as they were too heavy to travel. My dogs were quite satisfactory considering it was my first day out with them. Heavy shower of snow fell just before we commenced the drive home. Arrived home @ 7 pm, "dog" tired. A severe initiation for our first day out.¹ The 'treble fleeces' represented three years growth of wool, the more common double-fleecers they would come across being sheep which had missed a muster and were therefore carrying more than one year's growth of wool.

Austin's heavy cold - a rare occurrence on Campbell Island, and probably one he had brought with him - combined with a fall of snow which delayed a further muster, meant that it was five days before his first opportunity to shear. *Wet today; but fortunately we had some 100 sheep in the shed, which were dry enough to shear. Put these out by 12 noon. Big percentage of double fleeces among them. I shore 12 (my first day on the board). Four of us shearing. The chaps reckoned I shaped well; but personally I do not think so. Time & experience will improve me and I aim at my 100 before the season is out.² He reached 90 within two months, and 98 on 23 November the following season, and shore 96 on 9 February of the same season, as well as 'footrotting same,' paring the hooves of lame sheep, and cutting out of the rotten and often stinking horn. Bluestone on a small mop was usually applied afterwards.*

The men on the island had to take on a wide variety of jobs in addition to mustering and shearing. A typical day might consist of *shearing; footrotting; dipping; drafting; pressing wool; branding rams; driving out rams; docking lambs & turning out shorn sheep,³ docking being the removal of the lambs' tails, most probably with a docking knife. Then again: Very heavy rain thru the night. In forenoon "footrotted" & then drafted some 170 sheep we had in the shed overnight. Shore some 50 in the afternoon, & then docked and tailed the lambs of this mob. Heavy showers during the day; but quite mild. Am improving on the shearing stunt.⁴*

A mixed day of mustering could begin with *Revaille [sic] 7 am. Mustered Nth Col. Mobbed up @ 11 am., Bill & I bringing home main mob & the rest mustering the scrub valley. Home @ mid-day. After dinner Bill & I rowed to head of bay & brought home two sheep we had failed to drive home. We then yarded, mouthed, drafted & dipped remainder of sheep on hand, same being driven out. Sheddied up "woollies" in readiness for shearing tomorrow.⁵ Mouthing is estimating the ages of sheep by examining their teeth.*

When sheep were in the shed there was little free time, as for example when, within days of arriving, Austin picked a pile of locks in the woolshed after dinner, locks being the floor sweepings and poorest fragments of wool separated with the belly pieces from the fleece.⁶

Christmas was no exception when there was work to be done: *Xmas Day. A dull morning: Calm. Set out at 6 am to muster the back of Honey. Took about 1 1/2 hours to walk to our beat via Filboll (sic) track, Robby & I working together. Heavy fog and rain set in. After deliberation decided to give it up so set out for home?; but after walking for some hour or so found we were lost. Lit a fire & waited for fog to lift. It did & we found we were at the mouth of the harbour: some six miles from home! Fog disappeared but rain continued. Arrived home after midday. A great experience! Christmas Day. After our dinner (some good) retired for the day. Now severe fog all around.*⁷

Quite often, when a sheep carrying too great a weight of wool to keep up with the rest was encountered on the beat, shearing took place there and then; or the sheep would have to be shorn later: *In the afternoon mustered Cave Rocks paddock. A good clean muster. That is, except for one missed, so Robby & I afterwards went over to the bridge (a mile & half back) and shored a double fleece.*⁸ On another occasion, typically, *we put in day at back of Col with bag and shears ("10" woollies).*⁹

The 1920/21 season, in the middle of Austin's two-year stint, was his only full one, heralded by the increasing number of lambs seen during shepherding. On 3 September 1920 *Albert saw two lambs above scrub on Stb. Pt. First of season.* Four days later: *I forgot to mention we saw four lambs on the Peaks to-day.* On 15 September *they could do nothing in weather like this. Hope for a change as soon as possible as lambing will shortly be at its height.* On 28 September *it was good weather for lambing, which will now be at its height.*

The first muster was on 2 November—the month Austin had arrived the year before—and the last shearing on Friday 29 April: *To-day finished shearing for season. Total shorn "4134". Exceptionally good result under most adverse circumstances throughout season.*

The season ended with bringing in and sorting out rams, including those which had been drafted into home paddocks. After shearing, the best were selected to run with the sheep: *Today we mustered Beeman & after drafting rams, (100) drove out "5" to S.Col & 3 to N.Col.*¹⁰ *Drafted rams & after a cup of tea drove some 14 rams to Fey & Azimuth via Nth Col. . . . Distributed rams over block & set out for home.*¹¹ The rest, still valuable for their wool, were turned out with the wethers: *Brought in rams & drafted 10; which we drove with a cut of about 100 wethers (which Paul & I mustered from Stb Col. paddock) to Stb Point & Sq. Hill.*¹² Work with the rams ended between the middle of May¹³ and the beginning of June.¹⁴

Sometimes a muster of the Lyall Range, which flanked the northern side of Perseverance Harbour, ending in Moubray Hill at the heads, or of Mt

Honey, which rose to 558 metres and formed the massive bulk of high ground on the southern and inner curve of the harbour, started by rowing down the harbour to the heads and the beginning of the beat, a distance of some eight kilometres, as on New Year's Day 1920: *Breakfast 5 am. A great morning. Rowed down to the Heads - over an hours row. Set out to muster N.E. Harbour side of Lyall Peaks. Longest drive we have had yet..... Sheep very stubborn. Hard driving. Mobbed up at 5 pm. A great muster. Home 6.30 pm..... After tea, drafted, shedded up & ground shears. Started some good "burns" on the run. Undergrowth very dry. finished up 8.30 pm!* After tea the following day, Austin and Sandy rowed around the head of the harbour to South Point, to pick up five double fleeces left there from a muster two days before.

Although there are days on end during which Campbell Island never sees the sun, with rain on the majority of them, the strong prevailing winds also quickly dry the scrub, and when conditions were right burn-offs were started to improve the land for grazing: *Set some tussock fires in Cave Rocks; & they have been burning all day. Albert went out to have a look at it to-night. Now dying down; but it has made a grand clearance.*¹⁵ There was even an occasion when a burn-off had to be doused, for fear of damaging the fence line.¹⁶

Perseverance Harbour, on which the dinghy proved so useful for mustering, all but cuts Campbell Island in two, with only a further two kilometres of steep land, Col ridge between North and South Col, separating it from the north west coast. The lesser area to the south is dominated by Mt Honey and Filhol Peak to the west of it. South of these are Puiseaux Peak and Eboulé Peak with their sheer cliffs to the sea, and a shallow lake draining into Monument Harbour.

North of Perseverance Harbour and the Lyall Range are Mt Fizeau and Mt Azimuth, the broad valley inland from Northeast Harbour where the Marlborough whalers had their base, Mt Faye and then North Cape, the farthest point, eleven kilometres from the farm homestead as the albatross flies. To the west of the farm base were Northwest Bay, and the steep country of Mt Dumas, Menhir and Mt Paris with its sheer sea cliffs, and finally Penguin Point.

When difficulties occurred far from base, the problem of retrieving stock had to be left for another day. But even within a few hours of the homestead, it was still a nuisance. *Mustered home face of Stb. Col & drove to yards. One ram broke away & made for water. I rescued him in dinghy when he was nearly over to Beeman. Then shore three rams & boated same to Beeman.*¹⁷

If the problem was the weather, little could be done: *Rowed to Nellies Rest in dinghy to muster far end of Peaks. Sheep, including a number of "doubles", were travelling well when heavy fog & rain set in from*

*N'ly. Abandoned muster; rowed home against stiff breeze. Afternoon gloriously fine. The irony of it!*¹⁸

Traversing the island on foot was easiest on the windswept and exposed high country. Sheltered slopes and valleys could be choked with *Myrsine* and *Dracophyllum*, where small pockets of sheep could easily be missed by men and dogs. In these sheltered places were also the remnants left by browsing sheep of the succulent giant flowering herbs, or megaherbs, which are one of the splendours of parts of the subantarctic Campbell and Auckland islands: *Pleurophyllum speciosum*, *Anisotome latifolia*, and *Stilbocarpa polaris*. Only the golden-flowering lily *Bulbinella rossii* was left uneaten, and considerable effort was spent trying to clear this lily from the home paddocks: *Grubbed some lillies [sic] in the dipping paddock until 11 am. The Island is more or less covered with a growth of wild lily which the sheep do not eat: hence the grubbing.*¹⁹

The impact that the island's environment had on farming operations is evident in the diary: *Breakfast gong 5.30 am. Set out to muster Monument Head beyond the Lake. Arrived on outer beat at 9 am. Bitterly cold S. wind blowing with sleet showers. Robby & I went to the head of the "point", en route seeing quite a number of pug seals on the beach.... Great views of a very heavy sea from the cliffs. Mobbed up at 1 pm & drove home to Depot paddock. Too wet to shed up. A miserable day on the hills. Muster all double fleeces - not mustered last season.*²⁰

A night in the small hut at Northwest Bay, which Austin describes as a *very decent little crib*,²¹ gave them a good start when mustering the west of the island. They would then spend a second night at the hut mid way through the drive home before completing the muster. In March 1921 the first day was successful and they passed a fairly comfortable night in contrast to a sleepless one on a previous occasion.²² But then, the weather brought frustration: *very heavy rain & in morning drizzle & dense fog. Could do nothing that day; no advantage to stay over there so set out for home. . . .altogether bad luck.*²³

There was no point in waiting for the weather, which could suddenly clear, or just as suddenly close in. *Cook arose @ 2.30 am, & had breakfast ready at 3.30; but heavy rain then setting in, muster was abandoned for day.*²⁴

The following day, 13 January 1920, the fight with the weather was won, but at some cost. *Set out to muster Fey. Dull morning. Heavy rain & sleet showers. Arrived on our beat at 10.30 am. Some walk! Very heavy going. A long drive up Fey Valley. Some fine waterfalls on way up. Unfortunately did not have camera. Mobbed up at 5.45 pm.... Home @ 8 pm. A 15 hours muster. Biggest day yet. Am very tired tonight.*

March, with the brief summer gone, could be cold, and extremely wet: *Very cold day with heavy sleet snow & rain showers all day. Did not venture beyond the woolshed.*²⁵ And again: *St Pat's Day. Heavy driving rain from S.E. for 24 hours. Everything soaking absolutely. Commenced shearing after breakfast. No light to commence sooner. Shore until 2.30 pm, when we had to stop on a/c of wet sheep. (driving rain finding its way into shed.) Sheep were dry when put into shed!!!*²⁶

In contrast to musters bringing in sheep in good numbers of two or three hundred, or even 500 at a time,²⁷ Austin's diary gives numerous instances of hard work for little reward, as when *I boated to Honey a ram & ewe that had got in with wethers.*²⁸ But such tasks were not without compensation: *Four "woollies" at Capstan. Drove them to beach beyond cliff: shore them at beach: great sea running.*²⁹ *Chased a woolly (300 yards). Downed and shore him. A great sprint*³⁰ - the woolly in this case probably being an animal which had eluded a muster and so missed a shearing. And again: *At 9 am launched the "Brindisi", six of us rowing to Heads where we landed at Finger Post. Heavy fog. Mustered along Peaks to Nellies' Rest, Joe holding & Andrew waiting in boat. Mobbed up on beach where we "downed" & shore sheep (21). All clearskin "bushers". Could not muster this corner in main muster. Sheep would not drive. Had lunch then loaded boat with fleeces & seven lambs. Home 4.30 pm. An exciting excursion.*³¹ A 'clearskin' is an unbranded or unmarked sheep, and 'bushers' (an apt term used by Austin) are sheep similar to 'scrubbers', or animals of poor quality that have missed a muster and run wild.³²

Winter was the time to catch up on jobs in and around the house and concentrate on farm repairs and maintenance, largely confined to the nearby paddocks and buildings: *Shed work all day. Days very short just now: not light before 8.30 & it is too dark to work after 4 pm.*³³ Home paddock gates were mended and tarred, and then stored under cover until the start of shearing. *I have been boiling tar to-day & tarring those gates.... One lot of tar boiled over; but, Paul, who resumed duty yesterday, put out the conflagration, without summoning the brigade.*³⁴

Winter's numerous jobs included cutting tracks through the *Dracophyllum* scrub to ease the next season's mustering,³⁵ cutting rails and posts from the scrub,³⁶ carting and carrying binding clay from the beach to the crush yard,³⁷ and keeping an eye on the stock: *We have been "shepherding" over at Nth. Col. Sheep now showing wool.*³⁸

In readiness for mustering, repairs were made to the hut at Northwest Bay,³⁹ which involved carrying out materials, and there was always fencing to be done, and renovations and alterations in the yards.⁴⁰

Burn-offs would be started while out shepherding, as for example on Mt Dumas, when they *set fires from top of hill down to creek; burning a*

*track, which job was our object in going out there;*⁴¹ or near Filhol Peak: *set out for Sq Hill (shepherding). Roused up sheep & burnt tussock on way home. Our fires extended from mouth of Lake... to well up on face of Filboll [sic].*⁴²

Farmyard animals also had to be looked after, for they had ducks,⁴³ pigs – waiting for the final boat they *killed last pig (shortage of pig food very acute)*⁴⁴, hens (*“Dinkie” our mascot fowl laid her first egg to-day*),⁴⁵ and geese: *Another goose sick... ten eggs to-day.*⁴⁶ There was also an old mare, which was occasionally seen;⁴⁷ but the ground was too soft for horses, and mustering was done on foot.

In readiness for the shearing season, the gratings would be cleared out under the woolshed,⁴⁸ and the loft sorted out and wool packs overhauled.⁴⁹

The island’s cattle tended to congregate round Capstan Bay, a small bay within Northwest Bay (see footnote, p. 107). They were occasionally visited, the calves being caught and earmarked: *“Rounded up” cattle at Capstan Bay. Great excitement. I was “rushed” by a heifer; but managed to “side-step”. A close call (so the chaps say).*⁵⁰

The men, varying in number between four and seven (Appendix 1), had twenty three dogs when Austin first went down,⁵¹ and inevitably so many dogs brought problems: *By the way “Glen” and “Spark” (the two pups) are fast approaching the “nuisance” & incidentally the “tying up” age: only today they insisted in following us out & not content with that created a disturbance by getting in the way when we were bringing in those sheep: a circumstance which called for some language. This has happened before.*⁵²

In November 1920 began the frustrating saga of Clyde going missing. *He is not far away, for last night he made a visit to the shed & devoured half of one of our house sheep hanging there!*⁵³ *Just over a week later “Clyde” made his appearance in Depot paddock; but made off before I could catch him.*⁵⁴ A fortnight later, *“Kelso” was shot to-night, as a result of his not showing any sign of working ability. “Clyde” made another visit to woolshed last night.*⁵⁵ The last mention of Clyde came a month after the trouble started: *In evening “Laddie” disappeared when off for his run. After searching paddocks I saw him on beach at Honey side. Putting off in dingby we headed him off at Observatory. After administering a good hiding to him made home @ 10 pm. “Clyde” still at large.*⁵⁶

Boat days were high days, and the arrival of the S.S. *Stella* on 11 April 1920 brought the inevitably frustrating mix of social activity and work. After receiving news and mail from New Zealand, Austin *went ashore and killed five sheep for boat after putting 10 rams on Beeman (Romneys which came down with steamer).* An ‘evening’ was spent aboard, but in the morning it was work again: *pressed six bales of wool.*

Steamer came up off shipping wharf at mid-day on Wed when we commenced loading and taking off stores.

The next changeover was nine months later, on Monday 24 January 1921, when they awoke to find the S.S. *Tutanekai* at anchor in dense fog. *Party came ashore, including ladies; a merry party.* However, the islanders had to spend the day baling wool, loading and unloading stores, and killing sheep for the boat. An evening on board must have been some consolation. With the departure of the *Tutanekai*, Austin was now farm manager.

On Monday 28 November 1921 they were shearing when *the "Karamu" dropped anchor @ 10 am.... Brought ashore stores, new men & dogs. We packed up. Left Island 9 pm.* The boat was months overdue, and life on the island had become stressful and difficult. Kerr notes (1976: 91) that: *The Karamu brought back... only a group of disgruntled men, no wool.... the men registered their displeasure by refusing to move the twenty-five bales of wool from the shed to the jetty.*

The Campbell Island Syndicate continued to work the farm until 1926, although with increasing difficulty. The Government's patrols of its subantarctic island castaway depots had come to an end and the depots had been closed down in 1923; wool prices had fallen and shipping costs had risen, if indeed ships prepared to service the island could be found, as this had always been a problem. In 1926 the Syndicate, operating at a loss and with its farm unattended since March, appealed to the Government, which agreed to make the *Tutanekai* available for one last voyage, at considerable expense, for the Syndicate's final shearing season. John Warren, his nephew Arthur Warren, and three men were taken down in December.

Warren's party had a harder time than Austin and his men. Nobody had been on the island for nine months. The house was infested with rats, leaking, and in poor repair. Rats had been into the stores, and the boat used for mustering was damaged. With so much to put right, the men only tallied 34 bales of wool for the season.

In 1927, John's brother Harry and two others joined them; and when the Campbell Island Syndicate's lease expired in 1927, the farm was not abandoned, but taken on by a heavily mortgaged John Warren.

In August 1929, Harry, who had left in June 1928 to recruit further staff, eventually returned, after a few abortive attempts to get back to the island, with one man, Alex Spence. The wool clip of 25 bales had been so poor that it would not pay for further charters, and no ship was sent down with supplies the following year.

In May 1931 relatives of the Warrens and Spence became anxious for them, and the Government was asked to help. After stalling, and spurred by urging from the press, it reluctantly sent the *Tamatea*, and the

marooned men were at last taken off in August 1931, after two years of having no contact with the world (Kerr 1976: Ch 9).

They knew nothing of the onset of the Great Depression, or the low price their wool would fetch. For months, mutton and tea had been their sustenance. They had wondered, *'Was it safe to work as hard as usual, on such meagre fare?' 'The cook set his mind to evolving variations on his one theme,'* Arthur Warren recalled (*The Evening Star* 14 Nov 1931). *'For breakfast we had chops fried with a piece of liver - when there was liver.... Our midday meal was a more ambitious affair. Indeed, there was quite a menu. First, a broth made of sheep's head, shanks, and kidneys, with a flavouring of blood which made it very strengthening. Then there would be braised mutton to follow. Then a good drink of tea...'* [which they had read was a good antidote to the diarrhoea they suffered if they relied too much on water] *'For the evening meal, when we came in wet and weary from our work, there would be grilled mutton, stewed mutton, roast mutton or boiled mutton.... Sometimes for a change there was minced mutton and even potted mutton. A meal de luxe was fish. But fish was hard to get, for the seals, sea lions, sea elephants... left little for man.'* Shag was 'good eating', as was the occasional albatross egg. Vegetables grew well, but the 'armies of rats' left little. Swedes would prove to be empty shells, and cauliflowers, peas, beans, potatoes, everything but cabbage was plundered.

Back in New Zealand, Warren was beset by creditors. After all he and his brother had been through, they were prepared to return to the island to work off their debts. But the Government finally stepped in, declared Warren's lease forfeit, and wrote off his debt.

Conservationists such as Guthrie-Smith, who had visited the island in 1927 and seen the damage grazing was doing to its environment, were determined the lease should not be renewed when it expired in 1937, and that the island should be declared a reserve for the protection of flora and fauna. The Government, under pressure from such protests, decided that any further attempts at farming should be abandoned. It took over Warren's sheep in 1938. Campbell Island was declared a reserve, although it was not formally gazetted as such until 1954 (Kerr 1976: Ch 11). The last sheep, fenced into half of the island in 1970, and then a quarter for monitoring purposes, were not eliminated until 1992. It was an end at last to the tenuous saga of farming operations on Campbell Island.

References

The diary

¹18 Nov 19 ²23 Nov 19 ³1 Mar 21 ⁴25 Nov 19 ⁵27 Feb 20 ⁶27 Nov 19
⁷25 Dec 19 ⁸22 Nov 19 ⁹15 Jan 21 ¹⁰27 Apr 21 ¹¹27 Apr 20 ¹²8 May 20
¹³13 May 20 ¹⁴1 Jun 21 ¹⁵4 Nov 20 ¹⁶16 Oct 21 ¹⁷10 Nov 20 ¹⁸16 Jan 21
¹⁹28 Nov 19 ²⁰5 Jan 20 ²¹22 Jan 20 ²²6 Mar 20 ²³4 Mar 21 ²⁴12 Jan 20
²⁵4 Mar 20 ²⁶17 Mar 21 ²⁷3 Jan 21 ²⁸3 Aug 21 ²⁹23 Mar 20 ³⁰8 Mar 20
³¹9 Mar 20 ³²10 Mar 20 ³³7 Jun 20 ³⁴29 Jun 20 ³⁵17,23, 30 Sep 20 ³⁶5 Jun 20
³⁷7 Aug 20 ³⁸2 Jun 20 ³⁹27 Oct 20, 17 Sep 21 ⁴⁰21 Jul, 16 Oct 20 ⁴¹6 Sep 20
⁴²10 Aug 20 ⁴³21 May 20 ⁴⁴14 Aug 21 ⁴⁵2 Sep 21 ⁴⁶28 Aug 21 ⁴⁷2 Jul 20
⁴⁸29 Jul 20, 6 Jun 21 ⁴⁹26 Aug 20 ⁵⁰23 Mar , 1 Apr 20 ⁵¹17 Nov 19 ⁵²3 Jun 20
⁵³18 Nov 20 ⁵⁴26 Nov 20 ⁵⁵9 Dec 20 ⁵⁶16 Dec 20

Other sources

- Guthrie-Smith, H. 1936: Sorrows and joys of a New Zealand naturalist. Reed, Dunedin.
- Kerr, I.S. 1976: Campbell Island; a history. Reed, Wellington.
- Kerr, I.S.; Judd, N. (eds) 1978: Marlborough whalers at Campbell Island 1909–1916. A narrative based on the recollections of J. Timms. Department of Lands and Survey, Wellington.

Campbell Island weather

Erick Brenstrum

Campbell Island is an isolated speck of land in the vast and stormy Southern Ocean. Situated at latitude 52° 30' S, it lies within the so-called 'Furious Fifties' - a zone of persistent and often strong westerly winds. Records from the island show that gusts of gale force or stronger occur on average 280 times in a year. Temperatures are colder, but less variable, than those on mainland New Zealand. It rains on almost every day of the year. Snow occurs but the snow cover is usually thin and ephemeral, and there is no permanent snow or ice on Campbell Island or its satellite islands.

Austin makes a diary entry on the weather conditions virtually every day, so we get a good overall picture of the changing conditions in cloud cover, wind and rainfall throughout the year - though the only precise measurements recorded are those for barometric pressure. He often characterises the weather in colourful terms such as 'boisterous', 'bitterly cold' or 'miserable'. Interspersed with the bad days are the rare fine ones described variously as 'beautiful', 'lovely' or 'out of the box'. Farming operations involved a constant battle against the weather elements and there is frequent mention of 'doing nothing' or 'mustering out of the question' on account of the rain, snow, fog or strong wind.

Wind

The persistent westerly winds at Campbell Island are caused by the strong pressure gradient between depressions moving eastwards in the circumpolar trough near the edge of the Antarctic continent, and mobile anticyclones that pass mostly to the north of Campbell Island. Observations at the island over a ten-year period showed that the wind blew from the northwest, west or southwest almost 75% of the time in spring and autumn, and 68% of the time in summer and winter. Mean winds were gale force or stronger (greater than 33 knots) about 7% of the time in winter and spring, and about 5% of the time in summer and autumn.

Although by far the most common winds are westerlies, they do blow occasionally from other directions. For example, southerly winds blew about 6% of the time, generally as an anticyclone approached Campbell Island from the west. Southeasterly winds were reported about 2% of the time, either when an anticyclone passed to the south of Campbell Island, or when a low-pressure system formed over the Tasman Sea then moved southeastwards, passing between Campbell Island and the South Island of New Zealand.

These observations are recorded at Tucker Cove on the shores of Perseverance Harbour, which is relatively sheltered compared to the surrounding higher terrain, where limited observations have shown the wind to be typically twice as strong.

During Austin's sojourn on the island, the wind was occasionally strong enough to damage some of the buildings,¹ and once threw one of the boats 19 yards (6 m) up a beach, shattering it in the process.² Southerly winds were often bitterly cold. Wind also made it hard to row the boats at times.³ On rare occasions the winds were calm, often accompanying a cloudless sunny day.⁴

Cloud and sunshine

Air arriving at Campbell Island travels over hundreds or even thousands of kilometres of open ocean to get there. During this long journey, water is continually evaporating from the sea surface, making the air very moist. This is reflected in the monthly mean relative humidity, measured at 0900, which is usually above 80% for every month. It generally lowers in the afternoon but only by about 5%.

When air this moist rises over the hilly terrain of Campbell Island, an overcast cloud cap forms, which streams away downwind of the island. Consequently, bright sunshine is uncommon. On average, Campbell Island receives only 659 hours of sunshine each year, which is only 16% of the possible sunshine if the island were entirely cloud-free. By comparison, Invercargill has 1621 sunshine hours, or 38% of possible sunshine, Wellington 2019 hours (48%) and Auckland 2101 hours (50%). There are, on average, about 130 sunless days each year on Campbell Island, and 15 consecutive days without sunshine have been recorded. Overcast conditions, recorded at 0900, occur on 290 days a year, although in the afternoon the cloud tends to break up for a time. Slow moving winter anticyclones are particularly cloudy, sometimes bringing five or six days of overcast skies and intermittent drizzle, alleviated by only a couple of hours of sunshine.

The persistent cloudiness of Campbell Island is very evident from Austin's diary entries, especially when cloud is low enough to form fog at the level of the house or on the hills where they are mustering. He distinguishes between this low cloud and fog at sea level by calling the latter 'fog on the water'. Also evident is his delight in the sunshine when it breaks through the cloud for a few hours, and he positively exalts when it remains fine for a whole day as, for example, when he describes one Saturday in September 1920 as *A beautiful day. Veritably 'one out of the box' (& it had been in that box for quite a time)*.⁵ This enabled Austin to paint the house roof and store, and his companions to go fishing that day.

Rain

Rain (and associated forms of precipitation – drizzle, mist, fog, sleet, hail and snow) is a common theme running through Austin's diary.

Rain is conspicuous on Campbell Island because it is so frequent, but it does not fall in particularly great amounts. On average, the annual rainfall is 1425 mm and rain is recorded on 320 days of the year. This compares with 1228 mm over 161 days in Wellington, 1128 mm over 180 days in Auckland and 2874 mm over 206 days in Hokitika. Rainfall at the island is well distributed throughout the year. The month with fewest rain days is February, yet even then rain is recorded on 24 days on average. Rain occurs most frequently in May and August, each of which has an average of 29 days with rain. May is the wettest month, with an average of 148 mm, and the driest month is December, with 103 mm.

Much of the rain at the island is associated with cold fronts embedded in the westerly wind flow. Ahead of the front, winds blow from the northwest accompanied by several hours of rain. Behind the front, the wind changes to west or southwest and the rain eases to showers, with hail or snow possible in all months of the year. Thunder is rare, being heard on only one or two days a year. The heaviest rain is associated with depressions forming over the Tasman Sea, which then move southeast to pass close to the island. But heavy rain is less common on Campbell Island than over most of the rest of New Zealand. On the island the highest one-day rain totals are close to 60 mm for all months except May, when there has been a day with 86 mm. Most places in the north and west of the New Zealand mainland have maximum one-day rain totals around twice these values. The differences in rainfall intensity are explained by differences in temperature – the colder air of Campbell Island cannot retain as much water vapour as the warmer air further north.

Rain becomes a real issue for Austin. By his second, unanticipated, winter on the island the constant rain is getting him down. In July he remarks: *Yes; rain all day & every day.*⁶ and *It is ever thus! Rain (at times heavy), drizzle and fog.*⁷ He describes 12 July 1921 as: *A 'hell' of a day. Indeed we have had very little of any other variety for some weeks!!! Heavy rain all day! Truly '40' days & '40' nights. We are thinking of roofing the island.* This sense of humour also reappears in the comment for 15 July: *Change in weather. Yes, steady rain all day until 4 pm. They want a new washer on tap above!!!* By 22 July he has become quite exasperated and records: *Terrible day. Worst of my experience. Very heavy rain & thunder overnight.... Am sure sheep have not been dry for '5' weeks. Now some five weeks since we had a decent day. Don't you think one would be tired of it.*

By the next month the cold had set in, and on 7 August he notes: *Terrible day; in fact to-day I think has been the coldest day I have experienced in the short time I have lived. Freezing all night & all day. Gale from S'ly with blizzard.* In August the 10th was 'the usual rotten day.' and the 15th 'the usual miserable day.' Then, on 17 August, he remarks: *It is a pity there are not 400 days in the year; it would then have some 35 more on which to rain.* The bad weather finally broke on 10 September, which was: *A beautiful day. Calm; sunshine all day: what a change.* But it was not to last, as the very next day was *the antithesis of yesterday.... Simply awful. You get nothing 'thrown in' here; if you have a good day then you pay for it. Last night a burricane from N.E. to E'ly and then N'ly with torrential rain and worse than that. A gale; blew things about.*

Remarkably, despite all the rain it proved possible to burn off the tussock and scrub on New Years Day 1920 following a period of three rain-free days. A covering of fog was common, and this not only disrupted mustering operations, but also, on at least one occasion, caused the musterers to become lost on the hills.⁸ Sleet was also common, and snow fell at several times during the year, one December storm producing a three-inch deep snowcover around the house.⁹

Temperature

Temperatures vary little on Campbell Island. The average daily temperature varies from 9.3°C in January to 4.7°C in July. The diurnal temperature range (difference between average daily maximum and minimum) varies from 4.1°C in July to 5.5°C in December. By comparison, most places in the rest of New Zealand experience about twice as much variation in temperature, with a daily range nearer 10°C and a difference of 10°C or more between the average temperature in July and February.

The lack of temperature variation is caused by a combination of wind and the ocean. The temperature of the air arriving at the island is largely determined by the temperature at the surface of the ocean over which it travels. As the air crosses the island it changes little because the island is so small in area compared with the ocean. Moreover, a persistent cloud cover prevents the land being heated much by sunlight during the day and cooled much by radiation at night.

Ground frost occurs, on average, 43 days a year and can occur in any month. Air frost or screen frost (recorded in an above-ground screen) occurs 26 days a year, and is very rare in summer months.

The 'mildness' of the climate, particularly in winter, came as a surprise to Austin.¹⁰ Sunny days or part days are welcomed, and Austin sometimes describes them as very hot.¹¹ The wind chill of the southerlies could make conditions bitterly cold.¹²

Air pressure

Austin records air pressure (or barometric pressure) in inches almost every day. Interestingly, however, he does not seem to have tried to use the trends in pressure to forecast the weather. Indeed, in October 1920 he says: *To bet on the weather here, is a certain way to lose money. One never knows what it is going to be.*¹³

References

Diary

¹³0 Jul 20 ²4 Apr 20 ³22 Nov 19 ⁴10 Dec 19 ⁵11 Sep 20 ⁶2 Jul 21
⁷9 Jul 21 ⁸25 Dec 19 ⁹2 Dec 19 ¹⁰19 Jul 20 ¹¹11 Dec 19 ¹² 2 Dec 19
¹³14 Oct 20.



Mt Honey from the boat landing. Sketch by W.R. Fleck.

Wildlife of Campbell Island

Peter Moore

The main Campbell Island is a dissected volcanic pile rising to nearly 600 m at its highest point, with a cliff-bound coast indented by large fiord-like harbours. The island lies south of the forest zone, and tussock grassland, shrubland and herbfield dominate the landscape. Spectacular flowering megaherbs, such as *Pleurophyllum*, occur widely, *Dracophyllum* is the predominant woody shrub and ferns are common in gullies. Campbell Island is internationally renowned for its albatrosses, with six breeding species, of which the Campbell mollymawk breeds nowhere else in the world. The island is also a major breeding ground of the rare yellow-eyed penguin, while the eastern rockhopper penguin also breeds and several other species visit the island. The Campbell Island shag is another endemic bird, as is the rare flightless teal, now restricted to the offshore Dent Island. There are small breeding populations of the three main seal species in the New Zealand region—New Zealand fur seal, New Zealand (Hooker's) sea lion, and southern elephant seal. The southern right whale congregates at the island for mating.

Human impacts

Since the discovery of Campbell Island in 1810, there have been several brief episodes of human occupation for sealing and whaling, farming, wartime coastwatching and meteorological observation. Apart from the deliberate killing of seals and whales, and conversion of the vegetation through grazing of megaherbs and burning of tussock and scrub to encourage growth of pasture grasses, there were several other accidental effects of human contact. Principal among these were the introduction of Norway rats during the mid-1800s, and cats probably during the farming era, which together decimated the small burrowing seabirds and flightless birds such as Campbell Island teal and snipe.

Restoration of the island's wildlife and natural habitats began soon after it was reserved in 1954. For many years there was debate as to whether the descendants of the early sheep population constituted a valuable resource as a rare breed, or whether their effect on the nesting albatrosses, vegetation and soils of the island outweighed that value. From 1970, the sheep were progressively shot out from sectors of the island and restricted by fences until the final sheep were shot in 1992. In 2001, in the largest attempt at pest mammal eradication yet made in New Zealand, helicopters were used to spread bait to poison the rats, and evidence to date suggests they have been completely eliminated. Interestingly, the small population of wild cats had apparently died out

by the 1990s. Some 70 years after the farm was closed, the vegetation and wildlife are slowly recovering something of their former glory. There are fields of flowering megaherbs, and large *Chionochloa* tussocks are making a comeback, while albatross nests are dotted over the higher hillslopes. The absence of rats and cats will allow the return to the island of burrowing seabirds and flightless ducks.

Diary observations

It is very apparent from the diary record that Austin and his farming companions found their surroundings on the island and the wildlife of interest. In fact, Austin's diary contains more comments about the birds and seals seen than about social aspects of his isolated and rugged life. On occasion, cameras were in evidence as well as guns. While the birds and seals were sometimes shot for sport, many records of killing of wildlife refer to the need for extra dog food or to protection of the sheep from marauding skuas. Some references to animals in the diary are made obscure by the use of colloquial names which are no longer in use, but most of these can be guessed from the context.

Birdlife

Various types of 'hawks' are mentioned in the diary. 'Sea hawks' or 'hawks' were the brown skua *Catharacta skua*. It is noted that they departed the island for three months over the winter and returned in early August.¹ During their breeding season many skua pairs set up territories in penguin and mollymawk colonies where they prey and scavenge on eggs and chicks. They are certainly hawk-like in some ways, and have an eagle eye for potential prey or scavenging opportunities, hence lambs and afterbirth were good food sources. Austin saw evidence of hawks having killed & eaten lambs: three instances,² and noted that: *They are death on lambs and naturally we reciprocate that feeling towards them.*³ Hence the 'hawks' were fair game for the rifle. On one occasion Austin shot four skuas and one shag and wrote: *Death to the birds!*⁴

Austin also refers to 'molly-hawk', which is another name for mollymawk, the smaller group of albatrosses.⁵ The colony at the far point of the Faye Ridge, now known as the Bull Rock colony, is composed mainly of Campbell mollymawks *Thalassarche impavida* and the less numerous grey-headed mollymawk *T. chrysostoma*. The former species is found only on Campbell Island and has fluctuated in numbers, probably in response to changes in fishing effort of tuna longliners in the 1970s and 1980s. The latter species has been in long-term decline for at least 60 years. The whalers and shepherds were known to collect mollymawk eggs from the Courrejolles Isthmus colony.

It is difficult to identify the birds Austin refers to as 'jack hawks', said to be a rare bird.⁶ However, his 'sparrow hawk'⁷ is an alternative name to the New Zealand falcon *Falco novaeseelandiae*. Falcons, which reside on the Auckland Islands, and (the similar looking) Australasian harriers *Circus approximans* are occasionally seen on Campbell Island, and are perhaps a candidate for the vernacular 'jack hawks'.

The first eggs of the southern royal albatross *Diomedea epomophora* were found by Austin in late November⁸ and the first hatched young on 13 February 1920. Eggs were collected by the shepherds for food, including three dozen eggs during one foray.⁹ However, it was the burning and degradation of the tussock, and probable marauding by sheepdogs, that must have taken the main toll on the birds, for Guthrie-Smith reported their numbers were diminished in the 1920s. One estimate suggested fewer than 1000 nests may have been present at the time. Albatrosses being long-lived and slow breeders, are slow to recover their numbers, but by the mid 1990s there were about 8500 nests on the island. Austin's references to the fledged young albatrosses making their way to the water of the harbour is somewhat misleading, as most birds take-off from ridge tops.¹⁰ The birds seen floating on the harbours would have been those that failed to catch the wind on their first flight and were becalmed.¹¹ The rescue of one albatross that had been tangled in one of the fences at least showed that the men were not entirely devoid of compassion for the birds.¹²

Colonies of 'nellies', or northern giant petrel *Macronectes balli*, were noted at Square Hill (Puisseux Peak),¹³ presumably on the flanks of the hill close to Six Foot Lake, a favoured nesting area for many years.

'Mutton birds', or sooty shearwater *Puffinus griseus*, were seen in Perseverance Harbour in large numbers - Austin calls these flocks 'drives'.¹⁴ These would be visitors from the large colonies of The Snares, or possibly residents from the offshore stacks where rats were absent. The shepherds searched burrows for them at Northwest Bay, but noted that the rats had got in first.¹⁵

The Campbell Island shag *Leucocarbo campbelli* is found only on Campbell Island, where they nest on the cliffs. Austin saw some large flocks feeding in the harbour, and occasional ones were shot, presumably for sport or food.¹⁶

The great rookeries of rockhopper penguins *Eudyptes chrysocome* at Paris, with what Austin describes as *myriads of these quaint looking birds*,¹⁷ numbered 1.6 million birds in the 1940s but declined to about 100 000 by the 1980s. It is thought that global warming affected their food supply. The diary also mentions the 'bush penguin'¹⁸ or the yellow-eyed penguin *Megadyptes antipodes*, which, rather than nesting in colonies, walks inland to its nest under the cover of the *Dracophyllum* scrub. Other regular vagrants to the island caught the eye of the

shepherds, particularly the striking species, the king penguin *Aptenodytes patagonicus*, which lives in large colonies at Macquarie Island, and an Adelie penguin *Pygoscelis adeliae*, from Antarctica.¹⁹ King penguins suffered at the hands of people on Macquarie Island, as large numbers were rendered down for oil, once the supply of seals ran out. The birds visiting Campbell Island usually were looking for a quiet place to moult. Austin notes that they made good pets and were easy to tame, but the penguins may not have been as happy as the shepherds with this arrangement.²⁰

There is interesting mention of 'wild duck' in bays at the head of Perseverance Harbour, and nests and ducklings at Beeman Ridge and Garden Creek.²¹ Said to be *very rare birds here*, Austin could be referring to the flightless Campbell Island teal *Anas aucklandica nestotis*, which was wiped out from the main island by rats and cats, but today holds on to a precarious existence on the offshore Dent Island. The other possibility is the grey duck *Anas superciliosa*, which was not uncommon on Campbell Island in the 1940s. Reference to up to 12 'grey duck' at Six Foot Lake²² suggests that some of the 'wild duck' may have been teal. Rare sightings of flightless teal were made on the main island at Northwest Bay in the 1940s and 1950s, which incidentally is the closest accessible area on the main island to Dent Island.

The 'snipe' seen by Austin at the head of Beeman Bay²³ were possibly the Campbell Island snipe *Coenocorypha* sp., which was recently discovered on the offshore stack, Jacquemart Island. However, given the vulnerability of snipe to rats, this was more likely to have been an Arctic migratory wader, such as a bar-tailed godwit *Limosa lapponica*, which was also often called a snipe. Shepherds had previously reported godwits to visiting naturalists. Austin also mentions the shooting of two sandpipers.²⁴

Marine mammals

Various seals are mentioned throughout the diary. The occasional 'sea elephant'²⁵ would be a large mature bull male southern elephant seal *Mirounga leonina*, which is recognisable by the elephantine nose. Other 'pug' seals²⁶ probably refer to the juveniles and smaller female elephant seals, judging by the locations they were found (often at Monument Harbour), and the comment that they were of the same style as a leopard seal, with a different head. Although apparently wiped out on Campbell Island during the sealing era, and uncommon in 1907, elephant seals increased to a peak of about 200 breeding females in the 1940s. There was also an additional influx of moulting animals from the main population at Macquarie Island around November each year. Subsequently the Campbell Island population declined to less than 10 pups born per year by the 1980s. Apart from killing these pug seals on occasion for dog food, Austin also kept a skin of one to make a whip.

'Sea lions', or Hooker's or New Zealand sea lion *Phocarctos hookeri*, were hunted by sealers, but as they were less favoured commercially for their skins, they were still found in reasonable numbers in the early 1900s. For example, Austin mentions 'great numbers' of sea lions at Southeast Harbour and Northwest Bay,²⁷ both popular hangouts for male sea lions today. On one occasion they counted more than 20 sea lions on the beach at Northwest Bay.²⁸ The main population resides on the Auckland Islands, but there are probably 200–350 animals on Campbell Island. Many were despatched for dog food. For example, on 18 September 1920 Austin wrote: *Six sea lions in scrub. Took some 'snaps' of them. Drove two to beach & killed them for dogs.* One small animal with a light skin (a female) was kept for a living room mat.²⁹

The 'fur seals' seen were the New Zealand fur seal *Arctocephalus forsteri*, which was brought close to extinction by sealers. Hasselburgh, the discoverer of Campbell Island, apparently took 15 000 skins from the island in 1810. The industry was closed in 1894, but the whalers and farmers on Campbell Island were given licences to take seals in the periods 1913–16 and 1922–24, and at least 2750 animals were killed in those years. The diary mentions that there were 'plenty' of fur seals out towards Monument Head³⁰ but they were still well below pre-sealing numbers by the end of the century.

The island received several visits from leopard seals *Hydrurga leptonyx* during Austin's stay, and most were shot to feed the dogs. Leopard seals live in Antarctica, but immature animals stray further north.

The presence of whales, of which two to nine were seen by Austin on several occasions cavorting in Northwest Bay in winter,³¹ show that the preceding years of hunting of southern right whale *Balaena glacialis australis* had not wiped out the species. Fortunately for the whales, the whaling operation at Northwest Bay at least, had been relatively inefficient and catches were low. Probably fewer than 100 whales were taken in total between 1909 and 1916. Right whales visit the subantarctic islands in winter to mate and calve and in recent years have increased in numbers.

References

The diary

¹3 Aug 20 ²18 Sep 21 ³3 Aug 20 ⁴24 Dec 19 ⁵29 Mar 20 ⁶7 & 18 May 20
⁷3 Apr 20 ⁸28 Nov 19 ⁹7 Dec 19 ¹⁰29 Oct 20 ¹¹3 Nov 20 ¹²9 Nov 21
¹³9 May 20 ¹⁴4 Apr 20 ¹⁵15 Apr 20 ¹⁶17 Sep 20 ¹⁷23 Jan 20 ¹⁸19 Oct 21
¹⁹12 Nov 20 ²⁰3 Feb 20 ²¹20 Feb 20 ²²9 May 20 ²³21 Oct 20 ²⁴4 Nov 20
²⁵18 Nov 19 ²⁶5 Dec 19 ²⁷31 Dec 19 ²⁸4 Mar 21 ²⁹25 Sep 20 ³⁰13 Feb 20
³¹22 Jun 20

Other sources

- Bailey, A.M.; Sorensen, J.H. 1962: Subantarctic Campbell Island. *Proceedings no. 10, Denver Museum of Natural History*.
- Chilton, C. (ed.) 1909: The subantarctic islands of New Zealand. Reports on the geo-physics, geology, zoology, and botany of the islands lying to the south of New Zealand. Vol. II. Philosophical Institute of Canterbury.
- Cunningham, D.M.; Moore, P.J. 1994: The decline of rockhopper penguins *Eudyptes chrysocome* at Campbell Island, Southern Ocean and the influence of rising sea temperatures. *Emu 94*: 27-36.
- Guthrie-Smith, H. 1936: Sorrows and joys of a New Zealand naturalist. Reed, Dunedin.
- Kerr, I.S. 1976: Campbell Island; a history. Reed, Wellington.
- Kerr, I.S.; Judd, N. (eds) 1978: Marlborough whalers at Campbell Island 1909-1916. A narrative based on the recollections of J. Timms. Department of Lands and Survey, Wellington.
- Miskelly, C.M. 2000: Historical records of snipe from Campbell Island, New Zealand. *Notornis 47*: 131-140.
- Moore, P.J.; Moffat, R.D. 1990: Research and management projects on Campbell Island 1987/88. *Science & Research Internal Report 57*. Department of Conservation, Wellington.
- Moore, P.J.; Scott, J.J.; Joyce, L.J.; Peart, M. 1997: Southern royal albatross *Diomedea epomophora epomophora* census on Campbell Island, 4 January-6 February 1996. *Science & Research Series 101*. Department of Conservation, Wellington.
- Robertson, A.M. 1919: Photos of Campbell Island.
Alexander "Sandy" Robertson collection. Privately held by Viv Smith-Campbell, Lake Ōhau.
- Waugh, S.M.; Weimerskirch, H.; Moore, P.J.; Sagar, P.M. 1999: Population dynamics of black-browed and grey-headed albatrosses *Diomedea melanophrys* and *D. chrysostoma* at Campbell Island, New Zealand, 1942-96. *Ibis 141*: 216-225.

Appendix 1

MANAGERS AND MEN AT CAMPBELL ISLAND

First period, five months from Austin's arrival, 16 Nov 1919, to *Stella* changeover, 11–15 April 1920. Seven (or possibly eight) men.

Manager: Andrew Nicholson.^{1, 12} (Shetlander)¹
Men: Alfred Austin.
Robby [Alexander "Sandy" Robertson*] (Dunedin)²
Bill Ashton³
Bill Manson⁴ (Shetlander)¹³
Bill Fleck (cook)⁵
Joe [Joss*] (ex NZ Expeditionary Force, WWI)⁶
Sandy⁷ [Nickname for Robby above]

Second period, nine months, from *Stella* changeover, 11–14 April 1920, to *Tutanekai* changeover, 24–25 January 1921. (*Now reduced to family of four.*⁸)

Manager: Albert Metzger⁸
Men: Alfred Austin (sharing room with Albert Metzger)
Paul McQuarrie⁹
Bill Fleck (cook)

Third period, ten months, from *Tutanekai* changeover, 24–25 January 1921, to *Karamu* changeover, 28 November 1921. Five men.

Manager: Alfred Austin
Men: Paul McQuarrie
Bill Fleck
Jack — —¹⁰
Mac — —¹¹

References

¹19 Nov 19 ²16,17 Nov 19 ³27 Nov 19 ⁴13 Dec 19 ⁵11–14 Apr 20
⁶21 Nov 19 ⁷7 Dec 19, 2 Jan 20, 7 Feb 20, 11–14 Apr 20 ⁸11–14 Apr 20
⁹11–14 Apr 20 ¹⁰13 Feb 21 ¹¹16 Feb 21

¹²Kerr, I.S.; Judd, N. (eds) 1978: Page 67 *in*: Marlborough whalers at Campbell Island 1909–1916. A narrative based on the recollections of J. Timms. Department of Lands and Survey, Wellington.

¹³Kerr, I.S. 1976: Campbell Island; a history. Reed, Wellington. Pp. 79–82, 90.

*Name from back of photograph taken by Bill Fleck.